# Nonlinear elliptic equations in conformal geometry 

Prof. Sun-Yung Alice Chang

May 10, 2004

This is the set of Nachdiplom lectures which I have given during April-July 2001 at Zurich. In the lectures, I have focused the study on some non-linear partial differential equations related to curvature invariants in conformal geometry. A model of such a differential equation on compact surface is the the Gaussian curvature equation under conformal change of metrics. On manifolds of dimension four, an analogue of Gaussian curvature is the study of the Pffafian integrand in the Gauss-Bonnet formula. To be more precise, on a Riemannian manifold ( $M, g$ ) of dimension four, denote the Weyl-Schouten tensor $A$ as

$$
A_{i j}=R_{i j}-\frac{R}{6} g_{i j}
$$

where $R_{i j}$ is the Ricci tensor and $R$ is the scalar curvature of the Riemannian metric $g$; denote the second elementary symmetric function of $A$ as

$$
\sigma_{2}(A)=\sum_{i<j} \lambda_{i} \lambda_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left[(\operatorname{Tr} A)^{2}-|A|^{2}\right]
$$

where $\lambda_{i}(1 \leq i \leq 4)$ are the eigenvalues of $A$; then one has the Gauss Bonnet formula

$$
8 \pi^{2}(\chi M)=\int\left(\frac{1}{4}|W|^{2}+\sigma_{2}(A)\right) d v
$$

where $W$ denotes the Weyl tensor. Under conformal change of metrics, since $|W|^{2} d v$ is pointwisely conformally invariant, $\int \sigma_{2}(A) d v$ is conformally invariant. The main focus of this lecture notes is to study the partial differential equation describing the curvature polynomial $\sigma_{2}(A)$ under conformal change of metrics.

The lecture is organized as follows: In chapters 1 and 2 , we discussed the equation of prescribing Gaussian curvature on compact surface and provided the background and the main analytic tool (Moser-Trudinger inequalities) in the study. In chapter 3, we described the connection between Moser-Trudinger inequality to that of the Polyakov formula for the functional determinant of the Laplacian operator on compact surfaces. In chapters 4 to 6 , we discussed general conformal invariants, the connection of conformal invariants to conformal covariant operators on manifolds of dimension three and higher, with emphasize on a special 4 -th operator (called the Paneitz operator) on manifold of dimension 4. Finally in chapters $7-10$, we studied the connection of the Paneitz operator to the curvature polynomial $\sigma_{2}(A)$ described above. We also reported the work of Chang-GurskyYang [23] on the existence on manifolds $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ of solutions with $\sigma_{2}(A)>0$ under the assumptions that $\left.\int \sigma_{( } A\right)>0$ and $g$ be of positive Yamabe class.

The lectures were given at the beginning stage when the study of the fully non-linear PDE like that of $\sigma_{2}(A)$ were first developed. Since then, there have been much progress both in the existence and regularity results in the study of such equations. The readers are, in particular, referred to the article by GurskyViaclovski [56], where a simpler proof, from a somewhat different perspective, of the main result in [23] discussed in this note was given. There have also been
important development in the existence results of general conformal invariants by works of Graham-Zworski, [50] Fefferman-Graham [44]. There is also a more up to date survey article [20] for recent developements in this research field.

This notes were organized and taken by Heiko von der Mosel during the lectures. Without his many inputs, and the very careful reading of the materials, the notes may never be in published form. The author appreciate very much the corrections suggested later by Meizun Zhu, Fengbo Hang, Paul Yang and proof readings by Sophie Chen and Edward Fan. Finally and not the least, the author appreciate the many collegial discussions among participants at ETH during the lectures; she wishes to thank in particular, Michael Struwe, for making the arrangement for a very pleasant and rewarding visit.

Alice Chang

## § 1 Gaussian curvature equation

$\operatorname{Let}\left(M^{2}, g_{0}\right)$ be a compact closed two-dimensional surface with a given metric $g_{0}$ and Gaussian curvature $K_{g_{0}}$. We are interested in the behavior of the Gaussian curvature under conformal change of the metric. That is, we consider the metric

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{g}:=\rho g_{0} \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\rho \in C^{\infty}(M), \rho>0$. Notice that $\bar{g}$ is conformal to $g_{0}$, i.e while the length of a vector changes; the angle between any two vectors is preserved under the change of metrics from $g_{0}$ to $\bar{g}$ on $M$. From now on we write

$$
\begin{equation*}
\bar{g}=g_{w}:=e^{2 w} g_{0} \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some function $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$.
Proposition 1.1 Let $K_{g_{w}}$ be the Gaussian curvature of $\left(M^{2}, g_{w}\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} w+K_{g_{w}} e^{2 w}=K_{g_{0}} . \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equation (1.3) is called the prescribed Gaussian curvature equation, where $\Delta_{0}=\Delta_{g_{0}}$ denotes the Laplace-Beltrami operator with respect to the background metric $g_{0}$. Sometimes we also denote $\Delta_{0}$ as $\Delta$ when the background metric is specified.

Proof of Proposition 1.1. Recall the definition of the Riemann curvature tensor (cf [3], [86]). For that let $p \in M^{n}$, and take an orthonormal basis $\left\{e_{i}\right\}$ of the tangent space $T_{p} M$ of $M$ at $p$. Then for two vector fields $X, Y \in T_{p} M$ one has

$$
\begin{aligned}
R(X, Y): & =\nabla_{X} \nabla_{Y}-\nabla_{Y} \nabla_{X}-\nabla_{[X, Y]} \\
R\left(e_{i}, e_{j}\right) & =\nabla_{e_{i}} \nabla_{e_{j}}-\nabla_{e_{j}} \nabla_{e_{i}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the two-form $R$ defines the curvature of the Riemannian connection $\nabla$.
The Christoffel symbols of $g$ are given by

$$
\Gamma_{i j}^{k}:=\frac{1}{2} g^{k l}\left(\frac{\partial g_{i l}}{\partial x^{j}}+\frac{\partial g_{j l}}{\partial x^{i}}-\frac{\partial g_{i j}}{\partial x^{l}}\right)
$$

and they satisfy

$$
\nabla_{e_{i}} e_{j}=\Gamma_{i j}^{k} e_{k}
$$

Let $R_{k i j}^{l}:=g\left(R\left(e_{i}, e_{j}\right) e_{k}, e_{l}\right)$, then the Ricci tensor is defined as

$$
R_{i j}:=R_{i k j}^{k}
$$

and the scalar curvature is obtained by contraction again:

$$
R:=R_{i j} g^{i j}
$$

For $\bar{g}=\rho g_{0}, \rho>0$ one computes directly (using $\bar{g}_{i l}=\rho\left(g_{0}\right)_{i l}, \bar{g}^{k l}=\rho^{-1} g_{0}^{k l}$ ), that the Christoffel symbols $\Gamma_{i j}^{k}$ of $\bar{g}$ satisfy

$$
\bar{\Gamma}_{i j}^{k}=\Gamma_{i j}^{k}+\frac{1}{2}\left(\delta_{i}^{k} \frac{\partial \log \rho}{\partial x^{j}}+\delta_{j}^{k} \frac{\partial \log \rho}{\partial x^{i}}-g^{k l} g_{i j} \frac{\partial \log \rho}{\partial x^{l}}\right) .
$$

When $n=2$ we write $\rho=e^{2 w}$ and get after a lengthy calculation

$$
\bar{R}_{1212}=e^{-2 w}\left(\left(R_{g_{0}}\right)_{1212}-2 \Delta_{0} w\right)
$$

which is equivalent to (1.3), since $K_{g_{0}}=\frac{1}{2}\left(R_{g_{0}}\right)_{1212}$ and $K_{g_{w}}=\frac{1}{2} \bar{R}_{1212}$.

Remark 1.2 Integrating both sides of (1.3) over $M$ gives in case $M$ is orientable

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{M} K_{g_{0}} d v_{0} & =\int_{M} K_{g_{w}} e^{2 w} d v_{0} \\
& =\int_{M} K_{g_{w}} d v_{g_{w}}  \tag{1.4}\\
& =2 \pi \chi(M) \\
& =2 \pi(2-2 g e)
\end{align*}
$$

where $d v_{0}=d v_{g_{0}}, \chi(M)$ is the Euler characteristic and $g e$ the genus of $M$. Here we used the Gauss-Bonnet Theorem. Hence $\int K_{g} d v_{g}$ is conformally invariant, and its sign is determined by the sign of $\chi(M)$.

One of the central problems is: Given a function $K \in C^{\infty}(M)$ on a compact closed two-dimensional manifold $M$ with fixed background metric $g_{0}$, when does there exist a metric $\bar{g}$ conformal to $g_{0}$, such that

$$
K_{\bar{g}}=K ?
$$

In other words, does (1.3) admit a solution $w$, such that $K_{g_{w}}=K$ ? This is usually called the problem of "prescribing Gaussian curvature". In the case when the compact surface is the standard 2 -sphere, the problem is commonly attributed to L. Nirenberg and is called the "Nirenberg" problem.

Kazdan and Warner [59] gave some necessary and sufficient conditions for the existence of solutions for (1.3) in some cases.

Theorem 1.3 Let $\chi(M)=0$. Then (1.3) has a solution $w$ iff either (i) $K \equiv 0$ or (ii) $K$ changes sign with $\int_{M} K e^{2 f} d v_{0}<0$, where $f$ is a solution of $\Delta_{0} f=K_{g_{0}}$.

Proof. By (1.4) and the assumption $\chi(M)=0$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
0=\int_{M} K_{g_{0}} d v_{0}=\int_{M} K_{g_{w}} d v_{g_{w}} \tag{1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence $\Delta_{0} f=K_{g_{0}}$ is solvable on $M$. Moreover, $f$ is unique up to a constant. If $w$ solves (1.3), then one easily checks that $u:=w-f$ is a solution of

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} u+K e^{2(u+f)}=0 \tag{1.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies by integration

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{M} K e^{2 f} d v_{0} & =-\int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} u\right) e^{-2 u} d v_{0} \\
& =\int_{M} \nabla_{0} u \cdot \nabla_{0}\left(e^{-2 u}\right) d v_{0}  \tag{1.7}\\
& =-2 \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2} e^{-2 u} d v_{0} \leq 0
\end{align*}
$$

Equality occurs iff $\left|\nabla_{0} u\right| \equiv 0$, which implies that $u \equiv$ const., i.e. $\Delta_{0} u \equiv 0$, hence by (1.6) $K \equiv 0$. If $K \not \equiv 0$, on the other hand, we have $\int K e^{2 f} d v_{0}<0$, and we infer from (1.5) that $K$ changes sign. This proves necessity.

If $K \equiv 0$, then $w:=f$ with $\Delta_{0} f=K_{g_{0}}$ solves (1.3). If $K \not \equiv 0, K$ changes sign and $\int_{M} K e^{2 f} d v_{0}<0$, then we claim that we can find a solution $u$ of equation (1.6), which also solves (1.3) setting $w:=u+f$ as seen above.

To prove this claim consider the set

$$
\mathcal{C}:=\left\{u \in W^{1,2}(M): \int_{M} K e^{2(u+f)} d v_{0}=0 \text { and } \int_{M} u d v_{0}=0\right\}
$$

which is not empty, since $K$ changes sign by assumption.
If we find a minimizing function $u_{0} \in \mathcal{C}$ of the energy functional

$$
E(u):=\frac{1}{2} \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2} d v_{0}
$$

i.e. with

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(u_{0}\right)=\inf _{u \in \mathcal{C}} E(u) \tag{1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

then there exist some Lagrange multipliers $\alpha, \beta \in \mathbb{R}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} u_{0}+\alpha+\beta K e^{2\left(u_{0}+f\right)}=0 \quad \text { on } M \tag{1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Integrating this equation over $M$ we immediately obtain $\alpha=0$ by the first integral constraint in the definition of $\mathcal{C}$.

By the same argument we obtain for $\beta$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\beta \int_{M} K e^{2 f} d v_{0} & =-\int e^{-2 u_{0}} \Delta_{0} u_{0} d v_{0} \\
& =\int \nabla_{0}\left(e^{-2 u_{0}}\right) \cdot \nabla_{0} u_{0} d v_{0} \\
& =-2 \int\left|\nabla_{0} u_{0}\right|^{2} e^{-2 u_{0}} d v_{0}<0
\end{aligned}
$$

which by our assumption $\int_{M} K e^{2 f} d v_{0}<0$ means that $\beta>0$. Thus the shift $v_{0}:=u_{0}+\frac{1}{2} \log \beta$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} v_{0}+K e^{2\left(v_{0}+f\right)}=0 \quad \text { on } M \tag{1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

as a consequence of (1.9) with $\alpha=0$.
To justify the above arguments involving the Euler-Lagrange equation pointwise on $M$, we need to show that any minimizer of $E(\cdot)$ in $\mathcal{C}$ is sufficiently smooth to carry out the differentiation. In fact, it will be shown below (see Corollary 1.7), that for all $v \in W^{1,2}(M)$ with finite energy $E(v)<\infty$ one obtains

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{v} \in L^{p}(M) \text { for all } p>1 \tag{1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

This implies that $\Delta_{0} v_{0} \in L^{p}(M)$ for all $p>1$ by (1.10), in particular $v_{0} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ by standard elliptic estimates.

It remains to show that a minimizer $u_{0} \in \mathcal{C}$ satisfying (1.8) actually exists. Taking a minimal sequence $\left\{u_{i}\right\}_{i \in \mathbb{N}} \subset \mathcal{C}, E\left(u_{i}\right) \rightarrow \inf _{u \in \mathcal{C}} E(u)$ as $i \rightarrow \infty$, we readily get weak convergence $u_{i} \rightharpoonup u_{0} \in W^{1,2}(M)$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
E\left(u_{0}\right) \leq \liminf _{i \rightarrow \infty} E\left(u_{i}\right)=\inf _{u \in \mathcal{C}} E(u) \tag{1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence

$$
0=\int_{M} u_{i} d v_{0} \rightarrow \int_{M} u_{0} d v_{0} \quad \text { for } i \rightarrow \infty
$$

and we will see later (Corollary 1.8) that also

$$
\begin{equation*}
0=\int_{M} K e^{2\left(u_{i}+f\right)} d v_{0} \rightarrow \int_{M} K e^{2\left(u_{0}+f\right)} d v_{0} \quad \text { as } i \rightarrow \infty, \tag{1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

which shows $u_{0} \in \mathcal{C}$. Thus by (1.12)

$$
\inf _{u \in \mathcal{C}} E(u) \leq E\left(u_{0}\right) \leq \inf _{u \in \mathcal{C}} E(u) \Rightarrow E\left(u_{0}\right)=\inf _{u \in \mathcal{C}} E(u)
$$

which concludes the proof of Theorem 1.3.
Now we are going to provide the analytical tools necessary to prove (1.11) and (1.13).

Recall Sobolev's embedding theorem, which states that for a domain $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ one has $W_{0}^{\alpha, q}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{p}(\Omega)$ for $\frac{1}{p}=\frac{1}{q}-\frac{\alpha}{n}, q \alpha<n$.

If $\alpha=1, n=2, q<2$ we obtain $W_{0}^{1, q}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow L^{p}(\Omega)$. In general one cannot take the limits $q \rightarrow 2, p \rightarrow \infty$, i.e.

$$
W_{0}^{1,2}(\Omega) \nprec L^{\infty}(\Omega),
$$

as one can see for the function $u(x):=\log \left(1+\log \frac{1}{|x|}\right)$ on $B_{1}(0) \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$.
Instead N . Trudinger proved exponential $L^{2}$-integrability in the following sense.

Proposition 1.4 [87] Let $\Omega \subseteq \mathbb{R}^{2}$ be a bounded domain and $u \in W_{0}^{1,2}(\Omega)$ with $\int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{2} d x \leq 1$. Then there exist universal constants $\beta>0, C_{1}>0$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega} e^{\beta u^{2}} d x \leq C_{1}|\Omega| \tag{1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we write $W_{0}^{1,2}(\Omega) \hookrightarrow e^{L^{2}}(\Omega)$.
Remark 1.5 Under the assumption $\int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{2} d x \leq 1$ the inequality (1.14) is equivalent to the following:

There is a universal constant $C_{2}>0$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|u\|_{L^{p}(\Omega)} \leq C_{2} \sqrt{p}|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{p}} \text { for all } p \geq 2 \tag{1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us prove this remark first.
$" \Rightarrow "$ For all $k \in \mathbb{N}$ one has

$$
\frac{1}{k!} \int_{\Omega}\left(\beta u^{2}\right)^{k} d x \leq C_{1}|\Omega|
$$

hence

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\int_{\Omega} u^{2 k} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{2 k}} & \leq\left(\frac{k!}{\beta^{k}} C_{1}|\Omega|\right)^{\frac{1}{2 k}} \\
& =(k!)^{\frac{1}{2 k}} \frac{1}{\sqrt{\beta}} C_{1}^{\frac{1}{2 k}}|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{2 k}} \\
& \leq \tilde{C}_{2} \sqrt{2 k}|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{2 k}}
\end{aligned}
$$

since $(k!)^{\frac{1}{k}} \leq k$. This proves the claim for $p:=2 k, k \in \mathbb{N}$. For odd $p$ a simple use of Hölder's inequality gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left(\int_{\Omega}|u|^{p} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{p}} \leq\left(\int_{\Omega} u^{2 p} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{2 p}}|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{2 p}} \leq \tilde{C}_{2} \sqrt{2 p}|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{2 p}} \cdot|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{2 p}} \\
& =: C_{2} \sqrt{p}|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{p}} \\
& \text { "ผ" } \begin{aligned}
\int_{\Omega} e^{\beta u^{2}} d x & =\int_{\Omega} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k!}\left(\beta|u|^{2}\right)^{k} d x \\
& =\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{\beta^{k}}{k!}| | u \|_{L^{2 k}(\Omega)}^{2 k} \\
& \leq \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{\beta^{k}}{k!}\left[C_{2} \sqrt{2 k}|\Omega|^{\frac{1}{2 k}}\right]^{2 k} \\
& =\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k!}\left(2 \beta C_{2}^{2} k\right)^{k}|\Omega| \leq C_{1}|\Omega|
\end{aligned} .
\end{aligned}
$$

if one chooses $\beta$ so small that $2 \beta C_{2}^{2}<e^{-1}$, which according to Stirling's formula implies that the infinite series $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{k!}\left(2 \beta C_{2}^{2} k\right)^{k}$ is finite.

Proof of Proposition 1.4. Using the previous remark, it suffices to show (1.15). By symmetric rearrangement ${ }^{1}$ and scaling we may take $\Omega$ : $=B_{1}(0) \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$. Furthermore, we may assume $u \in \mathbb{C}^{\infty}$.

We can represent $u$ as

$$
u(x)=-\frac{1}{2 \pi} \int_{B_{1}(0)} \Delta u(y) \log |x-y| d y
$$

which after integration by parts leads to the estimate

$$
\begin{aligned}
|u(x)| & \leq C \int_{B_{1}(0)}|\nabla u(y)||x-y|^{-1} d y \\
& \leq C\left(\int_{B_{1}(0)}|\nabla u(y)|^{2}|x-y|^{-a} d y\right)^{\frac{1}{p}}\left(\int_{B_{1}(0)}|x-y|^{-a}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\int_{B_{1}(0)}|\nabla u(y)|^{2} d y\right)^{\frac{1}{2}-\frac{1}{p}},
\end{aligned}
$$

using Hölder's inequality for $\frac{a}{p}+\frac{a}{2}=1$.
Now $\int_{B_{1}(0)}|x-y|^{-a} d y$ is finite, since for $x, y \in B_{1}(0)$ one has $B_{1}(0) \subset B_{2}(x)$ and then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{B_{1}(0)}|x-y|^{-a} d y \leq \int_{B_{2}(x)}|x-y|^{-a} d y=C\left[\frac{r^{2-a}}{2-a}\right]_{r=0}^{r=2} \leq C(p+2) \tag{1.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{B_{1}(0)}|u|^{p} d x & \leq C\left[\int_{B_{1}(0)} \int_{B_{1}(0)}|\nabla u(y)|^{2}|x-y|^{-a} d y d x\right]\|\nabla u\|_{L^{2}\left(B_{1}(0)\right)}^{p-2}(p+2)^{\frac{p}{2}} \\
& \leq\|\nabla u\|_{L^{2}\left(B_{1}(0)\right)}^{p}(p+2)^{\frac{p}{2}+1},
\end{aligned}
$$

where we used Fubini's Theorem and (1.16) to obtain the last inequality. By assumption $\|\nabla u\|_{L^{2}\left(B_{1}(0)\right)} \leq 1$, i.e. we have

$$
\|u\|_{L^{p}\left(B_{1}(0)\right)} \leq C_{2} \sqrt{p}
$$

for some universal constant $C_{2}>0$.

Corollary 1.6 Let $\left(M^{2}, g\right)$ be compact and closed. Then there exist constants $\beta=\beta(g)>0$ and $C=C(g)>0$, such that for all $u \in W^{1,2}(M)$ with

$$
\int_{M} u d v_{g}=0, \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2} d v_{g} \leq 1
$$

[^0]one has
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} e^{\beta u^{2}} d v_{g} \leq C \operatorname{vol}(M, g) \tag{1.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

Proof. Take a partition of unity $\left(U_{i}, \phi_{i}\right)$ of $M$, such that each $U_{i}$ is diffeomorphic to the unit ball $B_{1}(0) \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ with $0 \leq \phi_{i} \leq 1, \phi_{i} \in C_{0}^{\infty}\left(U_{i}\right), \sum_{i} \phi_{i} \equiv 1$ on $M$, and set $u_{i}$ : $=\phi_{i} u$. Then $\nabla u_{i}=(\nabla u) \phi_{i}+\left(\nabla \phi_{i}\right) u$, and by Proposition 1.4 we have

$$
\left\|u_{i}\right\|_{L^{p}\left(U_{i}\right)} \leq \tilde{C}_{2} \sqrt{p}\left\|\nabla u_{i}\right\|_{L^{2}\left(U_{i}\right)}\left(\operatorname{vol}\left(U_{i}\right)\right)^{\frac{1}{p}} \text { for } p>2
$$

Hence

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u\|_{L^{p}(M)} & \leq \sum_{i}\left\|u_{i}\right\|_{L^{p}\left(U_{i}\right)} \leq \tilde{C}_{2} \sqrt{p}(\operatorname{vol}(M, g))^{\frac{1}{p}} \sum_{i}\left\|\nabla u_{i}\right\|_{L^{2}\left(U_{i}\right)} \\
& \leq \tilde{\tilde{C}}_{2} \sqrt{p}(\operatorname{vol}(M, g))^{\frac{1}{p}}\left(\|\nabla u\|_{L^{2}(M)}+\|u\|_{L^{2}(M)}\right) \\
& \leq C(g) \sqrt{p}(\operatorname{vol}(M, g))^{\frac{1}{p}}\|\nabla u\|_{L^{2}(M)}
\end{aligned}
$$

where we used Poincaré's Inequality, which is valid, since $\int_{M} u d v_{g}=0$. Notice that $C=C(g)$ depends on the metric $g$ via the partition of unity, in particular the terms involving $\nabla \phi_{i}$.

Corollary 1.7 For a compact and closed manifold $\left(M^{2}, g\right)$ there are constants $\eta>0$ and $c=c(g)$, such that for each $p \geq 2$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} e^{p(w-\bar{w})} d v_{g} \leq c \exp \left[\eta \frac{p^{2}}{4}\|\nabla w\|_{L^{2}(M)}^{2}\right] \tag{1.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $w \in W^{1,2}(M)$, where

$$
\bar{w}:=f_{M} w d v_{g}=\frac{1}{\operatorname{vol}(M, g)} \int_{M} w d v_{g}
$$

Proof. By Young's inequality we get for $\|\nabla w\|_{L^{2}(M)} \neq 0$

$$
p(w-\bar{w}) \leq \beta \frac{(w-\bar{w})^{2}}{\|\nabla w\|_{L^{2}(M)}^{2}}+\frac{1}{\beta} \frac{p^{2}}{4}\|\nabla w\|_{L^{2}(M)}^{2}
$$

where $\beta>0$ is the constant of Corollary 1.6. Taking the exponential of this inequality and integrating one obtains for $u:=\frac{w-\bar{w}}{\|\nabla w\|_{L^{2}(M)}}\left(\Rightarrow \bar{u}=0\right.$ and $\left.\|\nabla u\|_{L^{2}(M)} \leq 1\right)$

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M} e^{p(w-\bar{w})} d v_{g} & \leq \int_{M} e^{\beta u^{2}} \cdot e^{\frac{1}{\beta} \frac{p^{2}}{4}\|\nabla w\|_{L^{2}(M)}^{2}} d v_{g} \\
& \leq \exp \left[\frac{1}{\beta} \frac{p^{2}}{4}\|\nabla w\|_{L^{2}(M)}^{2}\right] \cdot c(g) \operatorname{vol}(M, g)
\end{aligned}
$$

which concludes the proof if one sets $\eta:=\beta^{-1}$ and $c:=c(g) \operatorname{vol}(M, g)$.

Corollary 1.8 If $u_{i} \rightharpoonup u$ in $W^{1,2}(M)$ as $i \rightarrow \infty$, and $\int_{M}|\nabla u|^{2} d v_{g} \leq c, \int_{M}\left|\nabla u_{i}\right|^{2} d v_{g} \leq$ $c$ with $\int_{M} u_{i} d v_{g}=0$ for all $i \in \mathbb{N}$, then for each $f \in L^{\infty}(M)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} f e^{p u_{i}} d v_{g} \rightarrow \int_{M} f e^{p u} d v_{g} \text { as } i \rightarrow \infty \tag{1.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Using the simple estimate $\left|e^{x}-1\right| \leq|x| e^{|x|}$ we can write

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M}\left|e^{p u_{i}}-e^{p u}\right| d v_{g} & =\int_{M} e^{p u}\left(e^{p\left(u_{i}-u\right)}-1\right) d v_{g} \\
& \leq \int_{M} e^{p u} p\left|u_{i}-u\right| e^{p\left|u_{i}-u\right|} d v_{g} \\
& \leq C\left(\int_{M} e^{4 p u} d v_{g}\right)^{\frac{1}{4}}\left(\int_{M}\left|u_{i}-u\right|^{2} d v_{g}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\int_{M} e^{4 p\left|u_{i}-u\right|} d v_{g}\right)^{\frac{1}{4}}
\end{aligned}
$$

using Hölder's inequality. The right-hand side tends to zero as $i \rightarrow \infty$, since the middle term does by Rellich's theorem, and the two integrals involving exponential terms stay bounded according to (1.18).

Remark. The case $\chi(M)<0$ has also been considered by Kazdan and Warner([59]), but is not completely settled. There are necessary conditions and also sufficient conditions, but a complete characterization of the solvability of the Gaussian curvature equation (1.3) as in Theorem 1.3 remains an open problem for $\chi(M)<0$. Let us now turn to the case $\chi(M)>0$.

## § 2 Moser-Trudinger inequality (on the sphere)

When $\chi(M)>0$, then either $\chi(M)=2$, in which case $M$ is diffeomorphic to the sphere $S^{2}$, or $\chi(M)=1$, i.e. $M \cong \mathbb{R} P^{2}$, the real projective space.

Consider $(M, g):=\left(S^{2}, g_{c}\right)$ with the canonical metric $g_{c}$ and Gaussian curvature $K_{g_{c}} \equiv 1$. The Gaussian curvature equation (1.3) then reads as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta w+K e^{2 w}=1 \quad \text { on }\left(S^{2}, g_{c}\right) \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we denote $\Delta=\Delta g_{c}$ as before. Here, $K \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{2}\right)$ is a given function.

Theorem 2.1 [59] Let $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ be a solution of (2.1). Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{S^{2}}\langle\nabla K, \nabla \varphi\rangle e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}=0 \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\varphi$ is any of the first eigenfunctions of $\Delta$ on the sphere, i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta \varphi+2 \varphi=0 \quad \text { on } S^{2} \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\left(\varphi=\tilde{\varphi}_{S^{2}}\right.$ for $\tilde{\varphi}: \mathbb{R}^{3} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}, \tilde{\varphi}(x)=\sum_{i=1}^{3} c_{i} x^{i}$, for some real constants $c_{i}, i=1$, 2, 3.)

Remark 2.2 By the Gauss-Bonnet Theorem

$$
\int_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}=4 \pi, \text { hence } K>0
$$

somewhere on $S^{2}$. But this information is not sufficient for the existence of solutions for (2.1). In fact, for $K=K_{\varepsilon}:=1+\varepsilon \varphi, \varepsilon \downarrow 0$, the Kazdan-Warner condition (2.2) is violated for every $\varepsilon>0$, which means that there are functions $K$ arbitrarily close to 1 , for which (2.1) is not solvable.

Proof of Theorem 2.1. One has $\nabla_{k} \nabla_{l} \tilde{\varphi}=\tilde{\varphi} g_{k l}$ for $\tilde{\varphi}(x)=x_{i}$ on $S^{2}$, hence (2.3) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \nabla_{k} \nabla_{l} \varphi=\Delta \varphi g_{k l} \quad \text { for } \varphi=\tilde{\varphi}_{\left.\right|_{S^{2}}} \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Integrating by parts repeatedly, and inserting (2.1) and (2.3) we compute

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{S^{2}}\langle\nabla K, \nabla \varphi\rangle e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}=-\int_{S^{2}} K \Delta \varphi e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}-2 \int_{S^{2}} K\langle\nabla \varphi, \nabla w\rangle e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}} \\
& \underset{(2.1)}{=}-\int_{S^{2}} \Delta \varphi(1-\Delta w) d v_{g_{c}}-2 \int_{S^{2}}\langle\nabla \varphi, \nabla w\rangle(1-\Delta w) d v_{g_{c}} \\
& \quad \underset{(2.3)}{=} 2 \int_{S^{2}} \varphi(1-\Delta w) d v_{g_{c}}+2 \int_{S^{2}} \varphi \Delta w d v_{g_{c}}+2 \int_{S^{2}}\langle\nabla \varphi, \nabla w\rangle \Delta w d v_{g_{c}} \\
& \underset{(2.3)}{=}-\int_{S^{2}} \Delta \varphi d v_{g_{c}}+2 \int_{S^{2}} \nabla_{i} \varphi \nabla_{i} w \Delta w d v_{g_{c}} \\
&=-2 \int_{S^{2}} \nabla_{l}\left(\nabla_{i} \varphi \nabla_{i} w\right) \nabla_{l} w d v_{g_{c}} \\
&=-2 \int_{S^{2}} \nabla_{l} \nabla_{i} \varphi \nabla_{i} w \nabla_{l} w d v_{g_{c}}-2 \int_{S^{2}} \nabla_{i} \varphi \nabla_{l} \nabla_{i} w \nabla_{l} w d v_{g_{c}} \\
&=-\int_{S^{2}} g_{l i} \nabla_{i} w \nabla_{l} w(\Delta \varphi) d v_{g_{c}}-\int_{S^{2}} \nabla_{i} \varphi \nabla_{i}\left(\nabla_{l} w \nabla_{l} w\right) d v_{g_{c}} \\
&(2.4) \\
&=-\int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} \Delta \varphi d v_{g_{c}}+\int_{S^{2}} \Delta \varphi|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}} \\
&=0
\end{aligned}
$$

A sufficient condition for the solvability of (2.1) was given by Moser in [64], see also [65].

Theorem 2.3 [Moser] If $K(-\xi)=K(\xi)$ for all $\xi \in S^{2}$, and if $\max _{S^{2}} K>0$, then (2.1) has a solution $w \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{2}\right)$ with

$$
w(-\xi)=w(\xi) \text { for all } \xi \in S^{2}
$$

## Sketch of the proof.

We consider a variational approach using the functional

$$
\begin{equation*}
J_{K}[w]:=\log \int_{S_{2}} K e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}-\frac{1}{4 \pi} \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}-2 f_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}} \tag{2.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

whose critial points, i.e. $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ satisfy the equation ${ }^{2}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\Delta w+1=\frac{K e^{2 w}}{f_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}} \quad \text { on } S^{2} \tag{2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^1]Then the shifted function

$$
\tilde{w}:=w-\frac{1}{2} \log f_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}
$$

solves (2.1).
Consequently, the proof boils down to showing the existence of a critical point for the functional $J_{K}[\cdot]$. For that we need some sharpened versions of Proposition 1.4, Corollary 1.6 and Corollary 1.7. We are going to state these results without proof.

Theorem 2.4 [Moser-Trudinger inequality] Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be a bounded domain, $u \in W_{0}^{1, n}(\Omega)$ with $\int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{n} d x \leq 1$. Then there is a constant $C=C(n)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega} e^{\alpha|u|^{p}} d x \leq C|\Omega| \tag{2.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $p=\frac{n}{n-1}, \alpha \leq \alpha_{n}:=n w_{n-1}^{\frac{1}{n-1}}, w_{k}:=k$-dimensional surface measure of $S^{k}$.
Remark 2.5 For $n=2$ one has $p=2, \alpha_{2}=2 w_{1}=4 \pi$. Moser has shown that the constant $\alpha_{n}$ in the theorem is sharp in contrast to the constant $\beta$ in Proposition 1.4. In fact, he constructed a sequence $u_{k} \in W_{0}^{1, n}\left(B_{1}(0)\right)$ with $\int_{B_{1}(0)}\left|\nabla u_{k}\right|^{n} d x \leq 1$ such that

$$
\int_{B_{1}(0)} e^{\alpha\left|u_{k}\right|^{p}} d x \rightarrow \infty \quad \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty
$$

if $\alpha>\alpha_{n}$.
We have seen in Corollary 1.6 that for general compact closed $(M, g)$ the constant on the right-hand side of (1.17) depends on the metric $g$. Working on $\left(S^{2}, g_{c}\right)$ allows us to control the constants.

Theorem 2.6 [Moser] There is a universal constant $C_{1}>0$, such that for all $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ with $\int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}} \leq 1$ and $\int_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}}=0$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{S^{2}} e^{4 \pi w^{2}} d v_{g_{c}} \leq C_{1} \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

In the same way as we deduced Corollary 1.7 from Corollary 1.6 one can show
Corollary 2.7 For $C_{2}:=\log C_{1}+\log \frac{1}{4 \pi}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log f_{S^{2}} e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}} \leq\left[\frac{1}{4 \pi} \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}+2 f_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}}\right]+C_{2} \tag{2.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$.

Remark 2.8 For $w$ as in Theorem 2.6 with $w \not \equiv 0$ one easily gets

$$
4 \pi=\int_{S^{2}} d v_{g_{c}}<\int_{S^{2}} e^{4 \pi w^{2}} d v_{g_{c}} \leq C_{1}
$$

hence $C_{2}>0$. For domain in plane(i.e. $n=2$ in Theorem 2.4), Carleson and Chang [19] has proved the existence of an extremal function for the Moser-Trudinger inequality for theorem 2.4, and the best constant $C_{2}$ in the statement of Theorem 2.4 is $>1+e$. This result was extended by T.L.Soong [84] proving the existence of extremal functions for (2.8) in Theorem 2.6, see also the results on the structural behavior of such extremal functions in M. Flucher's work, [45]. These investigations are also related to work of A. Beurling on the boundary behavior of analytic functions on the disk, [8]. With different arguments we will need to prove later that $C_{2}=0$ is the best constant in (2.9), which is the content of Onofri's inequality, Theorem 2.11. For even functions on $S^{2}$, Moser improved his result, Theorem 2.6:

Theorem 2.9 [Moser] If $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ with $\underset{S^{2}}{f} w d v_{g_{c}}=0, \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}} \leq 1$ and $w(\xi)=w(-\xi)$ for almost all $\xi \in S^{2}$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{S^{2}} e^{8 \pi w^{2}} d v_{g_{c}} \leq C_{3} \tag{2.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Again we infer
Corollary 2.10 For $C_{4}:=\log C_{3}+\log \frac{1}{4 \pi}, a=\frac{1}{2}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log \int_{S^{2}} e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}} \leq\left[a \cdot \frac{1}{4 \pi} \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}+2 f_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}}\right]+C_{4} \tag{2.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let us point out that only $a<1$ is crucial for later applications.
Now we finally turn to the proof of Theorem 2.3:
Proof of Theorem 2.3. Since $K>0$ somewhere, and $K$ is even,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{C}:=\left\{w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right): \int_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}}>0, w \text { even a.e. }\right\} \neq \emptyset \tag{2.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Consider the variational problem

$$
J_{K}[\cdot] \rightarrow \max J_{K}[w] \quad \text { on } \mathcal{C}
$$

and recall that if there is some $w_{0} \in \mathcal{C}$ such that

$$
\sup _{w \in \mathcal{C}} J_{K}[w]=J_{K}\left[w_{0}\right]
$$

then (2.1) has a solution.

First we observe that $J_{K}[\cdot]$ is bounded from above. Indeed, by Corollary 2.10, (2.11)

$$
\log f_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}} \leq \log \max _{S^{2}} K+\frac{a}{4 \pi} \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}+2 f_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}}+C_{4}
$$

which leads to

$$
J_{K}[w] \leq \log \max _{S^{2}} K+(a-1) \frac{1}{4 \pi} \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}+C_{4}<\infty
$$

since $a=\frac{1}{2}<1$. Taking a maximizing sequence $\left\{w_{l}\right\}_{l \in \mathbb{N}} \subset \mathcal{C}$ with

$$
\lim _{l \rightarrow \infty} J_{K}\left[w_{l}\right]=\sup _{w \in \mathcal{C}} J_{K}[w]=: L
$$

we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\frac{1-a}{4 \pi}\right) \int_{S^{2}}\left|\nabla w_{l}\right|^{2} d v_{g_{c}} & \leq \log \max _{S^{2}} K+C_{4}-J_{K}\left[w_{l}\right] \\
& \leq \log \max _{S^{2}} K+C_{4}+\varepsilon-L
\end{aligned}
$$

for some $\varepsilon>0$. This implies by the Poincaré inequality that the $w_{l}$ are uniformly bounded in $W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$, hence $w_{l} \rightharpoonup w_{0}$ in $W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ for some subsequence. Since all $w_{l}$ are even a.e. clearly $w_{0}$ is even a.e.by Rellich's Theorem. Moreover we know that by the definition of $J_{K}[\cdot]$ in (2.5)

$$
\left|\log \int_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w_{l}} d v_{g_{c}}\right| \leq L+C\left\|w_{l}\right\|_{W^{1,2}} \leq \tilde{C}<\infty
$$

hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{S^{2}} K e^{2\left(w_{l}-\bar{w}_{l}\right)} d v_{g_{c}} \geq \min \left\{4 \pi e^{-\tilde{c}}, 1\right\}=: c_{0}>0 \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

This implies by Corollary 1.8 that also

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w_{0}} d v_{g_{c}} \geq c_{0}>0 \tag{2.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

In fact, for $u_{l}:=w_{l}-\bar{w}_{l}$, where $\bar{w}_{l}:={\underset{S}{ }{ }^{2}}^{w_{l}} d v_{g_{c}}$, and $f:=K \in L^{\infty}\left(S^{2}\right)$, one infers from (1.19)

$$
\int_{S^{2}} K e^{2\left(w_{l}-\bar{w}_{l}\right)} d v_{g_{c}} \rightarrow \int_{S^{2}} K e^{2\left(w_{0}-\bar{w}_{0}\right)} d v_{g_{c}}
$$

which implies by (2.12), that for any $\varepsilon>0$, there is $l_{0} \in \mathbb{N}$ such that for all $l \geq l_{0}$

$$
\left(c_{0}-\varepsilon\right) e^{2\left(\bar{w}_{0}-\bar{w}_{l}\right)} \leq \int_{S^{2}} K e^{2 w_{0}} d v_{g_{c}}
$$

But $w_{l} \rightarrow w_{0}$ in $L^{2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ by Rellich's Theorem, hence (2.14) is true.

## Remarks.

1. We have omitted the proofs of Theorems $2.4,2.6,2.9$, due to the limited space. Theorem 2.4 is based on a calculus inequality applied to radially symmetric functions $u=u(|x|)$, to which the problem can be reduced, whereas the proof of Theorem 2.6 is more sophisticated. One reduces the problem to $u=u\left(x_{3}\right)$ working in spherical coordinates. A similar but more complicated reduction is done in the proof of Theorem 2.9.

It should be pointed out that these methods do not carry over to energies with higher order derivatives of $u$, since the heavily used relation

$$
\int_{\mathbb{R}^{n}}\left|\nabla u^{*}\right|^{n} d x \leq \int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{n} d x
$$

for the symmetric rearrangement $u^{*}$ of $u$, is not valid for higher order energies.
2. For a geometric interpretation ${ }^{3}$ of the constants $\alpha_{n}$ in Theorem 2.4, we look at the following isoperimetric problem for level sets. Let $u \in C^{\infty}(\Omega)$ be a Morse function.

$$
L_{t}(u):=\text { length }(\{x \in \Omega:|u(x)|=t\}), A_{t}(u):=\text { area }\{x \in \Omega:|u(x)| \geq t\}
$$

then the classical isoperimetric inequality states that

$$
\frac{L_{t}^{2}}{A_{t}} \geq 4 \pi
$$

Defining $\alpha_{2}(u):=\lim \inf _{t \rightarrow \infty} \frac{L_{t}^{2}(u)}{A_{t}(u)}$ for $u \in W_{0}^{1,2}(\Omega)$ one obtains

$$
\inf _{u \in W_{0}^{1,2}(\Omega)} \alpha_{2}(u)=4 \pi
$$

and the infimum is attained for $u \in C^{\infty}(\Omega)$ with circular level curves.
If $u \in W^{1,2}(\Omega), \Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{2}$ with $\int_{\Omega} u d x=0$, then
$\frac{L_{t}^{2}(u)}{A_{t}(u)} \geq\left\{\begin{array}{l}2 \pi, \text { if } \partial \Omega \in C^{2}, \\ 2 \min _{i} \theta_{i}, \text { if } \partial \Omega \text { is piecewise smooth with interior boundary angle } \theta_{i} .\end{array}\right.$
If $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ with $\int_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}}=0, w$ even, then $\alpha_{2}(w) \geq 8 \pi$.
Indeed, the isoperimetric inequality on $S^{2}$ for a closed curve with length $L$ and enclosed area $A$ says

$$
L^{2} \geq A(4 \pi-A)
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\alpha_{2}(v)=\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \frac{L_{t}^{2}(v)}{A_{t}(v)} \geq \lim _{t \rightarrow \infty}\left(4 \pi-A_{t}(v)\right)=4 \pi \tag{2.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^2]for all $v \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$ with $\int_{S_{2}} v d v_{g_{c}}=0$.
This explains the term $4 \pi$ in the exponential in (2.8) of Theorem 2.6. In particular, for $w$ even, the level curves of $w$ split in two equal parts of length $L_{t, 1}=L_{t, 2}=L_{t} / 2$. The same holds true for the enclosed areas
$$
A_{t, 1}=A_{t, 2}=A_{t} / 2
$$
which implies
$$
\alpha_{2}(w)=\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \frac{L_{t}^{2}(w)}{A_{t}(w)}=\lim _{t \rightarrow \infty} \frac{4 L_{t, 1}^{2}(w)}{2 A_{t, 1}(w)} \underset{(2.15)}{\geq} 2 \cdot 4 \pi
$$
compare to Theorem 2.9 , where $8 \pi$ occurs in the exponential in (2.10).
Notice that it is not clear if this geometric interpretation extends to the general case $n \geq 3$ because of the more complicated geometries of level sets.

We now give a sharpened version of Corollary 2.7, the Onofri inequality.
Theorem 2.11 [Onofri] Let $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log f_{S^{2}} e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}} \leq \frac{1}{4 \pi} \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}+2 f_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}} \tag{2.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

with equality iff

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta w+e^{2 w}=1 \tag{2.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
K_{g_{w}} \equiv K_{g_{c}} \equiv 1 \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

iff $w=\frac{1}{2} \log \left|J_{\phi}\right|$, where $\phi: S^{2} \rightarrow S^{2}$ is a conformal transformation of $S^{2}$. In other words, equality in (2.16) holds iff

$$
\begin{equation*}
e^{2 w} g_{c}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right) \tag{2.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark 2.12 An analytic proof for the equivalence of (2.17) and (2.19) was given by Struwe and Uhlenbeck. The equivalence of $(2.18)$ and $(2.19)$ is the content of the classical Cartan-Hadamard Theorem. We will see later when deriving the Polyakov formula, why the Onofri inequality (which sharpens Corollary 2.7, allowing $C_{2}=0$ in (2.9)) is important.

Sketch of the proof of Theorem 2.11. The key idea is a result of Aubin.[5]
Lemma 2.13 [Aubin] Let $\mathcal{S}:=\left\{w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right): \int_{S^{2}} e^{2 w} x_{j} d v_{g_{c}}=0, j=1,2,3\right\}$. Then for $w \in \mathcal{S}$ the following is true: For all $\varepsilon>0$ there is a constant $C_{\varepsilon}$ such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log \int_{S^{2}} e^{2 w} d v_{g_{c}} \leq\left(\frac{1}{2}+\varepsilon\right) \frac{1}{4 \pi} \int_{S^{2}}|\nabla w|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}+2 f_{S^{2}} w d v_{g_{c}}+C_{\varepsilon} \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that the symmetric class $\mathcal{S}$ is not too special, since for each $w \in C^{1}\left(S^{2}\right)$ there is a conformal transformation $\phi: S^{2} \rightarrow S^{2}$, such that

$$
T_{\phi}(w):=w \circ \phi+\frac{1}{2} \log \left|J_{\phi}\right| \quad \text { is in } \mathcal{S}
$$

In fact $T_{\phi}$ gives a $1-1$ correspondence.
Using (2.20) one can obtain compactness for maximizing sequences of $J_{K}[\cdot]$ on $\mathcal{S}$, see (2.5). The Euler-Lagrange equation for this constrained variational problem contains Lagrange multipliers, that can be shown to vanish using the KazdanWarner condition, Theorem 2.1. Finally, the uniqueness of the solution to (2.17), which then is the Euler-Lagrange equation for $J_{K}[\cdot]$ on $\mathcal{S}$, leads to $w_{*} \equiv 0$ as the minimizer. (2.16) follows from $0=J_{K}[0]=J_{K}\left[w_{*}\right] \leq J_{K}[w]$ for all $w \in W^{1,2}\left(S^{2}\right)$. (see [72])

## Remarks.

1. For nonsymmetric $K>0$ Chang and Yang [31], [32] have proved an index formula for (2.1) under very mild nondegeneracy conditions on $K$, e.g. for Morse functions $K$, based on the Moser-Trudinger inequality. For general K, K.C.Chang and Liu [21] have extended these results.

2 . Solutions of (2.17), or equivalently (2.19), are unique, which is proven by stereographic projection

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\pi:\left(S^{n}-\text { northpole }\right) \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n} \\
\xi \stackrel{\pi}{\longmapsto} x(\xi)
\end{array}
$$

with inverse $\xi=\pi^{-1}(x), \xi_{i}=\frac{2 x_{i}}{1+|x|^{2}}, \xi_{n+1}=\frac{|x|^{2}-1}{|x|^{2}+1}$.
For $n=2$ the transformed equation becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\Delta u=e^{2 u} \quad \text { on } \mathbb{R}^{2} \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x)=\log \frac{2}{1+|x|^{2}}+w(\xi(x)) \tag{2.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assuming $\int_{\mathbb{R}^{2}} e^{2 u} d x<\infty$, W.X. Chen and C. Li [36] proved that (2.21) holds iff $u(x)=\log \frac{2 \lambda}{\lambda^{2}+\left|x-x_{0}\right|^{2}}$, for some $\lambda>0, x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}^{2}$. Hence $\int_{\mathbb{R}^{2}} e^{2 u(x)} d x=4 \pi=\left|S^{2}\right|$.

Note that without the assumption $\int_{\mathbb{R}^{2}} e^{2 u} d x<\infty$, there are actually other analytic solutions to (2.21). In fact, one has a complete picture of the solutions of this equation on $\mathbb{R}^{2}$, see the classification of [38]. On $\mathbb{R}^{n}, n \geq 3$, Caffarelli, Gidas and Spruck [16] developed a full theory regarding the equation $-\Delta u=u^{\frac{n+2}{n-2}}$. The idea of projecting equations on $S^{n}$ to $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ will also be useful for higher order problems leading to $(-\Delta)^{n / 2} u=(n-1)!e^{n u}$ instead of (2.21).

## § 3 Polyakov formula on compact surfaces

Theorem 3.1 Suppose $\left(M^{2}, g_{0}\right)$ is a compact surface, $g_{w}:=e^{2 w} g_{0}$ is a metric conformal to $g_{0}$, with $\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w}\right)=\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{0}\right)$.

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
F[w]:=\log \frac{\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g_{w}}\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g_{0}}\right)}=-\frac{1}{12 \pi} \int_{M}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{2}+2 K_{g_{0}} w\right) d v_{0} \tag{3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

On $\left(S^{2}, g_{c}\right)$ we denote $S[w]:=\underset{S^{2}}{f}\left|\nabla_{g_{c}} w\right|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}+2 \underset{S^{2}}{f} w d v_{g_{c}}$.
As a consequence of Theorem 3.1 and Onofri's inequality (Theorem 2.11) we obtain

Corollary 3.2 On $\left(S^{2}, g_{c}\right)$, one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log \frac{\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g_{w}}\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right)}=-\frac{1}{3} S[w] \leq 0 \tag{3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $w \in C^{\infty}\left(S^{2}\right)$ with $\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w}\right)=4 \pi$, hence $F[w] \leq F[0]$, i.e. $F[\cdot]$ is maximal at the standard metric $g_{c}$, which corresponds to $w=0$.

Notice that $\log \left(\operatorname{det}-\Delta_{g_{w}}\right)$ is defined via the regularized zeta function as in Ray and Singer ([79]).

Corollary 3.3 On any compact surface $\left(M^{2}, g_{0}\right)$ with $K_{g_{0}} \equiv$ const. $\leq 0$ and with $\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{0}\right)=1$ one has: If $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ satisfies $\int_{M} e^{2 w} d v_{0}=\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w}\right)=1$, then

$$
F[w] \leq 0
$$

with equality only at the constant curvature metric $g_{0}$.
Proof. First notice that by Jensen's inequality

$$
e^{2 \bar{w}} \leq f_{M} e^{2 w} d v_{0}=\int_{M} e^{2 w} d v_{0}=1
$$

thus $\bar{w} \leq 0$, where $\bar{w}:=\underset{M}{f} w d v_{0}=\int_{M} w d v_{0} . K_{g_{0}} \leq 0$ implies $\int_{M} 2 K_{g_{0}} w d v_{0}=$ $2 K_{g_{0}} \int_{M} w d v_{0} \geq 0$, hence $F[w] \leq 0$.

Observe that the above argument leads to

$$
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{2} d v_{0} \leq-12 \pi F[w]
$$

which means that spectral information given by $F[w]$ bounds the energy of $w$. For a related result in case of the sphere $\left(K_{g_{0}}=K_{g_{c}} \equiv 1\right)$ we refer to the end of this section for a result by Osgood-Phillips-Sarnak.

For the definition of the zeta functional determinant $\log \left(\operatorname{det}-\Delta_{g}\right)$, we consider a compact Riemannian manifold $\left(M^{n}, g\right), \partial M=\emptyset$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
0=\lambda_{0}<\lambda_{1} \leq \lambda_{2} \leq \ldots \leq \lambda_{k} \leq \ldots \tag{3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

denoting the eigenvalues of the Laplace-Beltrami operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\Delta_{g}:=-\frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_{i}}\left(g^{i j} \sqrt{g} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_{j}}\right), \sqrt{g}:=\sqrt{\operatorname{det} g}, g^{i j}:=\left(g_{i j}\right)^{-1} \tag{3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The eigenfunctions $\left\{\phi_{j}\right\}$ form an orthonormal basis for $L^{2}(M)$ and satisfy

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{g} \phi_{j}+\lambda_{j} \phi_{j}=0 \quad \text { on } M \tag{3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

We consider the zeta function

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta(s):=\sum_{\lambda_{k} \neq 0} \lambda_{k}^{-s} \tag{3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and observe that formal differentiation leads to

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \zeta^{\prime}(s)=\sum_{\lambda_{k} \neq 0}-\left(\log \lambda_{k}\right) \lambda_{k}^{-s}, \text { i.e. } \\
& \zeta^{\prime}(0)=-\sum_{\lambda_{k} \neq 0} \log \lambda_{k}=-\log \prod_{k=1}^{\infty} \lambda_{k}
\end{aligned}
$$

This formal computation motivates the definition of the log-determinant according to Ray and Singer [79] as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log \operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g}\right):=-\zeta^{\prime}(0) \tag{3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will now justify the existence of $\zeta^{\prime}(0)$. Denote $N(\lambda):=\#\left\{j \in \mathbb{N}: \lambda_{j} \leq \lambda\right\}$ as the counting function and recall Weyl's asymptotic formula:

Proposition 3.4 Let $\left(M^{n}, g\right)$ be compact with $\partial M=\emptyset$. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
N(\lambda) \sim \omega_{n} \operatorname{vol}(M, g) \frac{\lambda^{n / 2}}{(2 \pi)^{n}}, \text { as } \lambda \rightarrow \infty \tag{3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} \frac{N(\lambda)}{\lambda^{n / 2}}=\frac{\omega_{n}}{(2 \pi)^{n}} \operatorname{vol}(M, g) \tag{3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\omega_{n}$ denotes the volume of the unit ball in $\mathbb{R}^{n}$. In particular, for $\lambda=\lambda_{k}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\lambda_{k}\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \sim \frac{k \cdot(2 \pi)^{n}}{w_{n} \operatorname{vol}(M, g)}, \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty \tag{3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

i.e., $\lambda_{k}$ grows like $k^{\frac{2}{n}}$ as $k$ tends to $\infty$.

The asymptotic relation (3.10) implies that $\zeta(s)$ is well-defined for $\operatorname{Re}(s)>$ $\frac{n}{2}$. To justify the expression $\zeta^{\prime}(0)$ in (3.7) recall the Mellin transform

$$
\begin{equation*}
x^{-s}=\frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-x t} t^{s-1} d t \tag{3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Gamma(s)$ denotes the value of the Gamma function at $s$ :

$$
\Gamma(s):=\int_{0}^{\infty} e^{-t} t^{s-1} d t
$$

Note that $\Gamma(s)$ has a simple pole at $s=0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lim _{s \rightarrow 0} \Gamma(s) s=1 \tag{3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using (3.11) we can rewrite $\zeta(s)$ in terms of the Gamma function for $\operatorname{Re}(s)>\frac{n}{2}$ :

$$
\begin{aligned}
\zeta(s) & =\frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{\infty} \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda_{j} t} t^{s-1} d t \\
& =\frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{\infty}(Z(t)-1) t^{s-1} d t
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z(t):=\int_{M} H(x, x, t) d v_{g}(x)=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda_{k} t}=\operatorname{Tr}\left(e^{t \Delta_{g}}\right) \tag{3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

is the trace of the heat kernel

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(x, y, t):=\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda_{k} t} \phi_{k}(x) \phi_{k}(y) \tag{3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proposition $3.5[67]$, [66] $H(x, y, t)$ is the unique fundamental solution of the heat equation

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}-\Delta_{g} u=0  \tag{3.15}\\
\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} u(x, t)=f(x)
\end{array}\right.
$$

on $M^{n}$ ( $M$ compact, closed), i.e. for any given $f \in C^{\infty}(M)$, the convolution $u:=H * f$ solves (3.15). Moreover $H$ is continuous on $M \times M \times(0, \infty)$, and $H(\cdot, \cdot, t) \in C^{2}(M \times M), H(x, y, \cdot) \in C^{1}((0, \infty))$. In addition ${ }^{4}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
H(x, x, t) \sim\left(\frac{1}{4 \pi}\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} B_{k}(x) t^{\frac{k-n}{2}}, \text { as } t \rightarrow 0^{+} \tag{3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B_{k}$ are local invariants of $M$ of order $k . B_{k} \equiv 0$ for all odd $k,(\partial M=\emptyset)$.

[^3]Consequently, by (3.13) and (3.16)

$$
\begin{equation*}
Z(t) \sim\left(\frac{1}{4 \pi}\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{k} t^{\frac{k-n}{2}}, \text { as } t \rightarrow 0^{+} \tag{3.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a_{k}:=a_{k}\left(\Delta_{g}\right):=\int_{M} B_{k}(x) d v_{g}(x)$ are the heat coefficients of $M$.
For $n=2$, (3.16) and (3.17) can be computed as

$$
\begin{array}{r}
H(x, x, t)=\frac{1}{4 \pi t}+\frac{K(x)}{12 \pi}+\frac{K^{2}(x) t}{60 \pi}+O\left(t^{2}\right), \text { as } t \rightarrow 0^{+} \\
Z(t)=\frac{\operatorname{vol}(M, g)}{4 \pi t}+\frac{\chi(M)}{6}+\frac{\pi t}{60} \int_{M} K^{2} d v_{g}+O\left(t^{2}\right), \text { as } t \rightarrow 0^{+} \tag{3.19}
\end{array}
$$

In particular, $a_{0}=\operatorname{vol}(M, g), a_{2}=\frac{1}{3} \int_{M} K d v_{g}=\frac{2 \pi}{3} \chi(M)$.
Thus, wherever the zeta function converges, we have

$$
\begin{aligned}
\zeta(s)= & \frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{1}(Z(t)-1) t^{s-1} d t+\frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{1}^{\infty}(Z(t)-1) t^{s-1} d t \\
= & \frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{1} t^{s-1}\left[\frac{\operatorname{vol}(M, g)}{4 \pi t}+\frac{\chi(M)}{6}+\frac{\pi t}{60} \int_{M} K^{2} d v_{g}+t^{2} P(t)-1\right] d t \\
& +\frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{1}^{\infty}\left(\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda_{k} t}\right) t^{s-1} d t
\end{aligned}
$$

where $P(t)$ is a bounded function in $t$. The second integral is holomorphic in $s$, since $\Gamma(s)$ does not vanish, and since $\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda_{k} t} \leq C e^{-\lambda_{1} t}$ for large $t$, by (3.10).

The first integral may be written as

$$
\frac{1}{\Gamma(s)}\left[\frac{t^{s-1}}{s-1} \cdot \frac{\operatorname{vol}(M, g)}{4 \pi}+\frac{\chi(M)}{6 s} t^{s}+\frac{\pi t^{s+1}}{60(s+1)} \int_{M} K^{2} d v_{g}-\frac{t^{s}}{s}\right]_{t=0}^{t=1}+B(s)
$$

where $B(s)=\frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{1} t^{s+1} P(t) d t$ is holomorphic for Res $>-1$. The above expression converges for all $s \in \mathbb{C}$ with $\operatorname{Re}(s)>1$, and has a meromorphic continuation to all of $\mathbb{C}$ with a simple pole at $s=1$.

To summarize these observations, $\zeta(s)$ is holomorphic for $\operatorname{Re}(s)>1$, has a meromorphic continuation to $\mathbb{C}$ with a simple pole at $s=1$ and with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta(0)=\frac{\chi(M)}{6}-1 \tag{3.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

(See e.g. Rosenberg [81], Chapter 5, for the corresponding result for general $n \geq 2$.)
Hence $\zeta(s)$ is analytic at $s=0$, which means that

$$
\zeta^{\prime}(0):=\lim _{s \rightarrow 0} \frac{\zeta(s)-\zeta(0)}{s}
$$

exists, and (3.7) is justified.

Remark 3.6 The notion of log-determinant of the Laplacian was introduced in [79] to define analytic torsion $T$ by

$$
\log T:=\frac{1}{2} \sum_{q=0}^{n}(-1)^{q} q \zeta_{q}^{\prime}(0)
$$

where

$$
-\zeta_{q}^{\prime}(0):=\log \operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{q}\right)
$$

$\Delta_{q}=$ Laplacian on $q$-forms. Cheeger [35] and W. Müller [68] proved independently later that this notion of analytic torsion coincides with a topological quantity, namely the Reidemeister torsion.

To prove Theorem 3.1 we need to look at a more general version of Proposition 3.5 , as defined by Branson and Gilkey. ([13])

Proposition 3.7 (Branson-Gilkey) Let $\varphi \in C^{\infty}(M),\left(M^{n}, g\right)$ closed and compact, and set $H_{\varphi}(x, t):=\varphi(x) H(x, x, t)$,

$$
Z_{\varphi}(t):=\operatorname{Tr}\left(\varphi e^{\Delta_{g} t}\right)=\int_{M} H_{\varphi}(x, t) d v_{g}(x)
$$

with $H(x, y, t)$ as in (3.14).
Then there are coefficients $B_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right)(\cdot), a_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right)$, such that $B_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right) \equiv 0$ for $k$ odd,

$$
\begin{align*}
H_{\varphi}(x, t) & \sim\left(\frac{1}{4 \pi}\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} B_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right)_{(x)} t^{\frac{k-n}{2}}, \text { as } t \rightarrow 0^{+}  \tag{3.21}\\
Z_{\varphi}(t) & \sim\left(\frac{1}{4 \pi}\right)^{\frac{n}{2}} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right) t^{\frac{k-n}{2}}, \text { as } t \rightarrow 0^{+} \tag{3.22}
\end{align*}
$$

with $B_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right)(x)=\varphi(x) B_{k}(x), B_{k}(x)$ as in (3.16), and

$$
\begin{equation*}
a_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right)=\int_{M} \varphi(x) B_{k}(x) d v_{g}(x) \tag{3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

(In particular, $a_{k}=0$ for $k$ odd.)
Notice that with this notation $a_{k}\left(1, \Delta_{g}\right)=a_{k}\left(\Delta_{g}\right)=a_{k}$ as defined in (3.17), in particular

$$
\begin{align*}
& a_{0}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right)=\int_{M} \varphi(x) d v_{g}(x)  \tag{3.24}\\
& a_{2}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{g}\right)=\frac{1}{3} \int_{M} \varphi(x) K_{g}(x) d v_{g}(x) \tag{3.25}
\end{align*}
$$

Proof of Theorem 3.1. The following Lemma is the crucial step in the proof of Theorem 3.1.

Lemma 3.8 (Key Lemma) Suppose $\left(M^{2}, g_{0}\right)$ is closed and compact. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} \zeta_{\Delta_{u+\varepsilon \varphi}}^{\prime}(0)=\frac{a_{2}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right)}{2 \pi}-2 \frac{\int_{M} \varphi d v_{g_{u}}}{\int_{M} d v_{g_{u}}} \tag{3.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have set $\Delta_{u}:=\Delta_{g_{u}}, g_{u}:=e^{2 u} g_{0}$.
We defer the proof of this Lemma to the end of this chapter and apply (3.26) to prove Theorem 3.1 first:

By (3.7) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
-\log \frac{\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g_{w}}\right)}{\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g_{0}}\right)} & =\zeta_{\Delta_{w}}^{\prime}(0)-\zeta_{\Delta_{0}}^{\prime}(0)=\int_{0}^{1} \frac{d}{d t}\left(\zeta_{\Delta_{t w}}^{\prime}(0)\right) d t \\
& =\int_{0}^{1} \frac{a_{2}\left(w, \Delta_{t w}\right)}{2 \pi} d t-2 \int_{0}^{1} \frac{\int_{M} w e^{2 t w} d v_{0}}{\int_{m} e^{2 t w} d v_{0}} d t \\
& =\frac{1}{(3.25)} \int_{0}^{1}\left(\int_{M} w K_{g_{t w}} d v_{g_{t w}}\right) d t-\left(\log \frac{\int_{M} e^{2 w} d v_{0}}{\int_{M} d v_{0}}\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{6 \pi} \int_{0}^{1}\left(\int_{M} w\left(-\Delta_{0}(t w)+K_{g_{0}}\right) d v_{0}\right) d t \\
& =\frac{1}{6 \pi} \int_{0}^{1}\left(t \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{2} d v_{0}+\int_{M} K_{g_{0}} w d v_{0}\right) d t \\
& =\frac{1}{12 \pi} \int_{M}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{2}+2 K_{g_{0}} w\right) d v_{0}
\end{aligned}
$$

(Notice that we used the identity $\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} \zeta_{\Delta_{t w+\varepsilon w}}^{\prime}(0)=\frac{d}{d t} \zeta_{\Delta_{t w}}^{\prime}(0)$ to apply (3.26)). Thus (3.1) is proved.

Proof of Lemma 3.8. Without justification of every step below we calculate formally:

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} \operatorname{Tr}\left(e^{t \Delta_{u+\varepsilon \varphi}}\right)=\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} \operatorname{Tr}\left(e^{t e^{-2 \varepsilon \varphi} \Delta_{u}}\right)  \tag{3.27}\\
& \quad=2 t \cdot \operatorname{Tr}\left(\varphi \Delta_{u} e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right)=-2 t \frac{d}{d t} \tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right)=\operatorname{Tr}\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right)-\frac{\int_{M} \varphi d v_{g_{u}}}{\int_{M} d v_{g_{u}}}
$$

and where we used that $\Delta_{g_{w}}=e^{-2 w} \Delta_{g}$ for $n=2$, as can easily be checked by (3.4).

Therefore, formally,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} \quad \frac{d}{d s}\right|_{\left.\right|_{s=0}} \zeta_{\Delta_{u+\varepsilon \varphi}}(s)=\left.\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0} \frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\left.\right|_{\varepsilon=0}} \zeta_{\Delta_{u+\varepsilon \varphi}}(s) \\
& =\left.\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{\left.\right|_{s=0}} \frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\left.\right|_{\varepsilon=0}} \frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{\infty}\left(\operatorname{Tr}\left(e^{t \Delta_{u+\varepsilon \varphi}}\right)-1\right) t^{s-1} d t \\
& =\left.\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{\left.\right|_{s=0}} \frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{\infty} t^{s-1} \frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\left.\right|_{\varepsilon=0}} \operatorname{Tr}\left(e^{t \Delta_{u+\varepsilon \varphi}}\right) d t \\
& =\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0} \frac{1}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{\infty} t^{s-1}\left(-2 t \frac{d}{d t} \tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right)\right) d t \\
& =\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0} \frac{1}{\Gamma(s)}\left\{\left[-2 t^{s} \tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right)\right]_{t=0}^{t=\infty}\right. \\
& \left.\quad+2 \int_{0}^{\infty} s t^{s-1} \tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right) d t\right\} \\
& =\left.2 \frac{d}{d s}\right|_{\left.\right|_{s=0}}\left\{\frac{s}{\Gamma(s)} \int_{0}^{\infty} t^{s-1} \tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right) d t\right\} \\
& =\left.2 \frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0}\left(\frac{s}{\Gamma(s)}\left\{\int_{0}^{1} t^{s-1} \tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right) d t+\int_{1}^{\infty} t^{s-1} \tilde{T} r\left(\varphi e^{t \Delta_{u}}\right) d t\right\}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Notice that there are no boundary terms in the integration by parts, as the integrand is of exponential decay at infinity, and, by the asymptotic behavior near zero (3.21), the integrand vanishes at zero, if $\operatorname{Re}(s)$ is sufficiently large.

The last integral is holomorphic in $s$. In addition, $\Gamma(s)=\frac{1}{s}-\frac{1}{s+1}+\ldots$, hence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{s}{\Gamma(s)}=s^{2}-\frac{s^{2}}{s+1}+\ldots, \text { in particular }\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0}\left(\frac{s}{\Gamma(s)}\right)=0 \tag{3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

So the only term we need to consider is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} & \left.\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0} \zeta_{\Delta_{u+\varepsilon \varphi}}(s) \underset{(3.22)}{=} 2 \frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0}\left(\frac{s^{2}}{4 \pi} \int_{0}^{1} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right) t^{\frac{k-2}{2}+s-1} d t-s f_{M} \varphi d v_{g_{u}}\right) \\
\quad= & \left.\frac{1}{2 \pi} \frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0} ^{2}\left[\frac{a_{0}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right)}{s-1} t^{s-1}\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{a_{2}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right)}{s} t^{s}+2 \sum_{k=4}^{\infty} \frac{a_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right)}{k+2 s-2} t^{\frac{k+2 s-2}{2}}\right]_{t=0}^{t=1}-2 f_{M} \varphi d v_{g_{u}} \\
= & \left.\frac{1}{2 \pi} \frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0}\left\{\frac{s^{2}}{s-1} a_{0}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right)+s a_{2}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right)+2 s^{2} \sum_{k=4}^{\infty} \frac{a_{k}\left(\varphi, \Delta \Delta_{u}\right)}{k+2 s-2}\right\} f_{M} \varphi d v_{g_{u}} \\
= & \frac{a_{2}\left(\varphi, \Delta_{u}\right)}{2 \pi}-f_{M} \varphi d v_{g_{u}}
\end{aligned}
$$

which proves (3.26).

Theorem 3.9 (Osgood-Phillips-Sarnak [73], [74]) Isospectral metrics on a closed compact surface $\left(M^{2}, g\right)$ are $C^{\infty}$-compact modulo the isometry class.

The basic idea in the proof is that on a compact closed surface $\left(M^{2}, g_{0}\right)$, each heat coeffient $a_{2 i}$ for each $i \geq 2$ controls the Sobolev $W^{i, 2}$-norm modulo some lower order $W^{l, 2}$-norm for $l<i$ of the conformal factor $w$ for the metric $g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$. But when $i=1, a_{2}=\frac{2 \pi}{3} \chi(M)$ is only a (topological) constant. Thus to control the $W^{1,2}$-norm of $w$, one needs to replace $a_{2}$ by some other isospectral information-which is provided by the $\log$ determinant functional $F[w]$ as defined in (3.1).
Sketch of the proof. Without loss of generality one can choose the background metric $g_{0}$ such that $K_{g_{0}} \equiv-1,0$, or +1 . For a sequence of isospectral metrics $g_{w_{k}}, a_{0}=\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w_{k}}\right)$ is fixed. Moreover, by (3.1)

$$
F_{0} \equiv F\left[w_{k}\right]=-\frac{1}{12 \pi} \int_{M}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} w_{k}\right|^{2}+2 K_{g_{0}} w_{k}\right) d v_{0} .
$$

If $K_{g_{0}}=0$ or $K_{g_{0}}=-1$ we get a uniform $W^{1,2}$-bound on $w_{k}$ by the observation after Corolaary 3.3 and Trudinger's embedding theorem (Corollary 1.7 in §1).

For $K_{g_{0}}=1$ one uses conformal transformations $\phi: S^{2} \rightarrow S^{2}$ and Aubin's Lemma (Lemma 2.13) as in the proof of Onofri's inequality, Theorem 2.11, to work in the symmetric class $\mathcal{S}$. Then one obtains a uniform bound on $\int_{S^{2}}\left|\nabla_{g_{c}}\left(T_{\phi}\left(w_{k}\right)\right)\right|^{2} d v_{g_{c}}$ in terms of $F\left[T_{\phi}\left(w_{k}\right)\right]=F\left[w_{k}\right]$ because of the isometric invariance of the spectrum. This together with the fact that the volume of the metric $g_{T_{\phi}\left(w_{k}\right)}$ is always $a_{0}$ leads to a uniform bound on $\left\|w_{k}\right\|_{1,2}$. The higher order coefficients $a_{2 i}$ then enable us to control the $W^{i, 2}$-norms of $w$ as well, for all $i \in \mathbb{N}$.

## § 4 Conformal covariant operators - Paneitz operator

Let $\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right)$ be a compact $n$-dimensional manifold with $\partial M=\emptyset$. We consider a formally selfadjoint geometric differential operator, i.e., an operator defined in terms of geometric quantitives of $\left(M, g_{0}\right)$. We say that $A$ is conformally covariant of bidegree $(a, b)$ iff

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{g_{w}}(\varphi)=e^{-b w} A_{g_{0}}\left(e^{a w} \varphi\right) \quad \text { for all } \varphi \in C^{\infty}(M) \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

## Examples.

1. The Laplace-Beltrami operator for $n=2$,

$$
\Delta_{g}:=\frac{1}{\sqrt{|g|}} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_{i}}\left(g^{i j} \sqrt{|g|} \frac{\partial}{\partial x_{j}}\right)
$$

satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{g_{w}}=e^{-2 w} \Delta_{g_{0}}, \text { i.e., } \tag{4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\Delta_{g_{0}}$ is conformally covariant of bidegree $(a, b)=(0,2)$. Recall that in this case

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} w+K_{g_{w}} e^{2 w}=K_{g_{0}} \tag{4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is the Gaussian curvature equation.
2. The conformal Laplacian for $n \geq 3$,

$$
L_{g}:=-\Delta_{g}+\frac{n-2}{4(n-1)} R_{g}
$$

satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{g_{w}}(\varphi)=e^{-\frac{n+2}{2} w} L_{g_{0}}\left(e^{\frac{n-2}{2} w} \varphi\right) \quad \text { for all } \varphi \in C^{\infty}(M) \tag{4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence $L_{g}$ is conformally covariant of bidegree $\left(\frac{n-2}{2}, \frac{n+2}{2}\right)$.
Notice that $b-a=2$ in Examples 1 and 2. The usual notation $g_{u}:=$ $u^{\frac{4}{n-2}} g_{0}:=e^{2 w} g_{0}$ leads to

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{g_{u}}(\varphi)=u^{-\frac{n+2}{n-2}} L_{g_{0}}(u \varphi) \quad \text { for all } \varphi \in C^{\infty}(M) \tag{4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

instead of (4.4). In particular, for $\varphi \equiv 1$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
L_{g_{u}}(1)=u^{-\frac{n+2}{n-2}} L_{g_{0}}(u) \tag{4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

and more explicitly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\Delta_{0} u+c_{n} R_{g_{0}} u=c_{n} u^{\frac{n+2}{n-2}} R_{g_{u}} \tag{4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $c_{n}:=\frac{n-2}{4(n-1)}$, which is the scalar curvature equation or Yamabe equation.
Here we will present a formal argument to derive (4.3) from (4.4) which we learnt from Tom Branson. The argument runs as follows: with a formal limit $n \searrow 2$ after analytic continuation one finds that (4.3) appears as a special case of (4.4): Taking $\varphi \equiv 1$ in (4.4) we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(-\Delta_{0}+\frac{n-2}{4(n-1)} R_{g_{0}}\right)\left(e^{\frac{n-2}{2} w}\right) & \underset{(4.4)}{=} e^{\frac{n+2}{2} w}\left(-\Delta_{g_{w}}+\frac{n-2}{4(n-1)} R_{g_{w}}\right)(1) \\
& =e^{\frac{n+2}{2} w} \frac{n-2}{4(n-1)} R_{g_{w}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Adding $0=\Delta_{0}(1)$ on the left-hand side leads to

$$
-\Delta_{0}\left(e^{\frac{n-2}{2} w}-1\right)+c_{n} R_{g_{0}} e^{\frac{n-2}{2} w}=e^{\frac{n+2}{2} w} c_{n} R_{g_{w}}
$$

Dividing both sides by $\frac{n-2}{2}$ and taking the formal limit $n \searrow 2$ we arrive at

$$
\begin{aligned}
& -\Delta_{0}\left(\frac{2}{n-2}\left(e^{\frac{n-2}{2} w}-1\right)\right)+\frac{1}{2(n-1)} R_{g_{0}} e^{\frac{n-2}{2} w}=e^{\frac{n+2}{2} w} \frac{1}{2(n-1)} R_{g_{w}} \\
\Rightarrow & -\Delta_{0} w+\frac{R_{g_{0}}}{2}=e^{2 w} \frac{R_{g_{w}}}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

which is (4.3), since $R_{g_{0}}=2 K_{g_{0}}, R_{g_{w}}=2 K_{g_{w}}$, and

$$
" \lim _{n \rightarrow 2} \frac{2}{n-2}\left(e^{\frac{n-2}{2} w}-1\right)=\lim _{a \rightarrow 0} \frac{e^{a w}-e^{0 \cdot w}}{a-0}=\left.\frac{d}{d a} e^{a w}\right|_{a=0}=w "
$$

3. The first higher order example of conformally covariant operators for $n=4$ is the Paneitz operator [75] given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
P_{4}:=\left(-\Delta_{g}\right)^{2}-\operatorname{div}_{g}\left(\frac{2}{3} R_{g} g_{i j}-2 R_{i j}\right) d \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $d$ is the differential (acting on functions). If we denote by $\delta$ the negative divergence, we can rewrite (4.8) as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(P_{4}\right)_{g}=\left(-\Delta_{g}\right)^{2}+\delta\left(\frac{2}{3} R_{g} g_{i j}-2 R_{i j}\right) d \tag{4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

This leads to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left\langle\left(P_{4}\right)_{g} \varphi, \psi\right\rangle_{L^{2}\left(d v_{g}\right)}=\int_{M}\left(\Delta_{g} \cdot \Delta_{g} \varphi\right) \psi d v_{g} & +\int_{M} \frac{2}{3} R_{g}\left\langle\nabla_{g} \varphi, \nabla_{g} \psi\right\rangle_{g} d v_{g} \\
& -2 \int_{M} \operatorname{Ric}\left(\nabla_{g} \varphi, \nabla_{g} \psi\right) d v_{g}
\end{aligned}
$$

The Paneitz operator $P_{4}$ has the following basic properties

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{w}}=e^{-4 w}\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}}, \quad \text { i.e. } \tag{4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\left(P_{4}\right)_{g}$ is conformally covariant with degree $(0,4)$.
Moreover,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}} w+2 Q_{g_{0}}=2 Q_{g_{w}} e^{4 w} \tag{4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
12 Q_{g}:=R_{g}^{2}-3\left|\operatorname{Ric}_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}-\Delta_{g} R_{g} \tag{4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

with $|\cdot|_{g}$ being the Hilbert-Schmidt norm, with respect to the metric $g$, i.e.,

$$
\left|\operatorname{Ric}_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}:=\sum_{i, j=1}^{n}\left|\left(R_{i j}\right)_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}
$$

Rewriting (4.11) as $-\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}} w+2 Q_{g_{w}} e^{4 w}=2 Q_{g_{0}}$ we discover the similarity to (4.3), and we can interpret $\Delta_{g}$ as $-\left(P_{2}\right)_{g}$.
In general, it is tedious to check formulas (4.10) and (4.11).
We will here consider two simple examples of the Paneitz operator.
3a. On $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ (or $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{4}$ ) with the flat metric $g=|d x|^{2}$ we have $R=0, R_{i j}=0$ and the Paneitz operator reduces to

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(P_{4}\right)_{g}=\left(-\Delta_{g}\right)^{2} \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

3b. If $\left(M^{4}, g_{c}\right)$ is an Einstein manifold, i.e., with $\left(R_{i j}\right)_{g_{c}}=\frac{1}{4} R_{g_{c}}\left(g_{c}\right)_{i j}, R_{g_{c}} \equiv$ const. for the canonical metric $g_{c}$, we get

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{c}} & =\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right)^{2}-\frac{1}{6} R_{g_{c}} \Delta_{g_{c}} \\
& =\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right)\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}+\frac{1}{6} R_{g_{c}}\right)  \tag{4.14}\\
& =\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right) \circ L_{g_{c}}
\end{align*}
$$

where $L_{g_{c}}$ is the conformal Laplacian discussed as Example 2. (4.14) holds true, since $\delta d=-* d * d=-\Delta$.

3c. As a special example we take $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$ with $R_{g_{c}} \equiv 12$, then (4.14) reads as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{c}}=\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right) \circ\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}+2\right) . \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

4. In the same paper [75], Paneitz also introdued the conformal Paneitz-operators $\left(P_{4}^{n}\right)_{g}$. Setting

$$
\begin{aligned}
J_{g} & :=\frac{R_{g}}{2(n-1)}, \\
A_{g} & :=\left(A_{i j}\right)_{g}:=\left(R_{i j}\right)_{g}-J_{g} g_{i j}, \\
\left(C_{i j}\right)_{g} & :=\frac{1}{n-2}\left(A_{i j}\right)_{g}, \\
\left(T_{g}\right)_{i j} & =(n-2) J_{g} g_{i j}-4 C_{g} g_{i j},
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
\left(Q_{4}^{n}\right)_{g}:=\frac{n}{2} J_{g}^{2}-2\left|A_{g}\right|^{2}-\Delta_{g} J_{g}
$$

one gets the operator

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(P_{4}^{n}\right)_{g}=\left(-\Delta_{g}\right)^{2}+\delta T_{g} d+\frac{n-4}{2}\left(Q_{4}^{n}\right)_{g} \tag{4.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the claim is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(P_{4}^{n}\right)_{g} \text { is conformally covariant of bidegree }\left(\frac{n-4}{2}, \frac{n+4}{2}\right) . \tag{4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

If one accepts (4.17) one can derive (4.11) from (4.17) in the same way (taking the formal limit $n \searrow 4$ ) as we deduced (4.3) from (4.4).

## Remarks

1. Although the operator $P_{4}^{n}$ was introduced by Paneitz, the specific expression of the $Q_{4}^{n}$ was introduced by T. Branson [9]. More significantly, in the special case when $n=4$, Branson has pointed out that $Q_{4}^{4}$ is part of the integrand in the Gauss-Bonnet formula. As we will see in the theorem below, the existence of $P_{k}^{n}$ for $k \geq 4$ was established in [49], In ([10], [11]) Branson has also introduced the corresponding $Q_{k}^{n}$-curvatures. We now call these curvatures $Q$ curvatures.
2. Notice in the definition of $\left(Q_{4}^{n}\right)_{g}$, that $\left(Q_{4}^{4}\right)_{g}=2 Q_{g}$, compare to (4.12) in Example 3.
3. The tensor $A$ is called the Weyl-Schouten tensor, we will discuss some eigenvalues problems of the tensor in later chapters of this lecture notes.

Theorem 4.1 [49]
Let $k$ be a positive even integer. Suppose $n$ is odd, or $k \leq n$.
Then there is a conformally covariant differential operator $P_{k}$ on scalar functions of bidegree $\left(\frac{n-k}{2}, \frac{n+k}{2}\right)$ with:
(i) the leading symbol of $P_{k}$ is $(-\Delta)^{k / 2}$, and on $\left(\mathbb{R}^{n},|d x|^{2}\right)$ we have $P_{k} \equiv$ $(-\Delta)^{k / 2}$,
(ii) $P_{k}=P_{k}^{0}+\frac{n-k}{2} Q_{k}$, where $Q_{k}$ is a local scalar invariant, and $P_{k}^{0}=$ $\delta S_{k-2} d$. Here, $S_{k-2}$ is a differential operator on 1-forms,
(iii) $P_{k}$ is self-adjoint.

## Remarks.

1. This theorem does not assert uniqueness of the operator $P_{k}$. For example, one can add $|W|^{2}$ for $n=4:\left(P_{4}\right)_{g}+|W|_{g}^{2}$ has the same properties of the theorem as $\left(P_{4}\right)_{g}$, where $W$ is the Weyl-tensor, which satisfies a pointwise conformal invariant property: $|W|_{g_{w}}^{2}=e^{-4 w}|W|_{g_{0}}^{2}$.
2. The condition $k \leq n$ is necessary if $n$ is even.
3. The work of [49] is based on the work of Fefferman-Graham, [43], where they regard $\left(M^{n}, g\right)$ as the conformal infinity of $\left(X^{n+1}, g^{+}\right)$for some asymptotically conformally compact Einstein manifold $X^{n+1}$ satisfying $R i c_{g^{+}}=-n g^{+}$. There is a correspondence between the conformal invariants of $\left(M^{n}, g\right)$ and the metric invariants of $\left(X^{n+1}, g^{+}\right)$.
4. Powers of conformally covariant operators are in general not conformally covariant any more, which can be seen by looking at powers of the conformal Laplacian.

Corollary 4.2 If $n$ is even, then there exists a curvature metric invariant $\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g}$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g_{w}} d v_{g_{w}}=\int_{M}\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g_{0}} d v_{0} \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

i.e., $\int_{M}\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g} d v_{g}$ is a conformally invariant quantity.

Note that $\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g}=Q_{g}$ for $n=4$, see (4.12). For $n=2$, the total curvature $\int_{M^{2}} K_{g} d v_{g}$ satisfies the invariance property (4.18), it is in fact a topological invariant according to the Gauss-Bonnet-Theorem.
Proof of Corollary 4.2 Since $\left(P_{n}\right)_{g_{0}} w+\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g_{0}}=\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g_{w}} e^{n w}$ obtained by analytic continuation from the conformal invariance relation for $P_{n}$, similar to the case $n=2$, 4, we can apply part (ii) of Theorem 4.1 [49] for $k=n . P_{n}^{0}$ is of the form $\delta S_{n-2} d$, which vanishes after integration. So

$$
\int_{M}\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g_{0}} d v_{0}=\int_{M}\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g_{w}} e^{n w} d v_{0}=\int_{M}\left(Q_{n}\right)_{g_{w}} d v_{g_{w}}
$$

## §5 Functional Determinat on 4-manifolds

Let $\left(M^{n}, g\right)$ be a compact $n$-dimensional manifold without boundary and suppose that $A$ is a self-adjoint, geometric differential operator with positive leading symbol of order $2 l$. In addition, assume that $A$ scales like its leading symbol, i.e., if $\bar{g}:=c^{2} g$ for some $c>0$, then $\bar{A}=(A)_{\bar{g}}=c^{-2 l}(A)_{g}=c^{-2 l} A$.

Take, e.g., $A$ as the conformal Laplacian, that is

$$
A:=L=-\Delta_{g}+c_{n} R_{g}
$$

compare with Example 2 of Chapter 4.
Then we have the heat kernel expansion with asymptotic behavior

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Tr}\left(\varphi e^{-t A}\right) \sim \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} t^{\frac{k-n}{2 l}} a_{k}(\varphi, A), \text { as } t \rightarrow 0^{+} \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
a_{k}(\varphi, A):=\int_{M} \varphi(x) B_{k}(x, A) d v_{g}(x)
$$

for $\varphi \in C^{\infty}(M)$, where $B_{k}$ is a local invariant (in metric g ) of order $k$, compare with Proposition 3.7. Denoting the eigenvalues of $A$ by $\lambda_{j}, j=0,1,2, \ldots$, then only finitely many of the $\lambda_{j}$ 's are negative, since $M$ is compact, and the asymptotic behavior for $j$ tending to $\infty$ is given by Weyl's formula

$$
\lambda_{j} \sim c(g, A) j^{\frac{2 l}{n}}
$$

(compare with (3.10) for $A=\Delta_{g}, l=1$.)
In analogy to (3.6) the zeta function $\zeta_{A}$ for the operator $A$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta_{A}(s):=\sum_{\lambda_{j} \neq 0}\left|\lambda_{j}\right|^{-s} \text { for } R e(s)>\frac{n}{2 l} \tag{5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\zeta_{A}$ has a meromorphic continuation onto all of $\mathbb{C}$ with simple poles, and is analytic at $s=0$, which may be proved in a fashion similar to the argumentation used in Chapter 3.

The determinant of $A$ is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{det} A:=(-1)^{\#\left\{j: \lambda_{j}<0\right\}} \exp \left(-\zeta_{A}^{\prime}(0)\right) \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence $|\operatorname{det} A|=\exp \left(-\zeta_{A}^{\prime}(0)\right)$, generalizing (3.7).
Notice that this definition of the determinant is not scaling invariant, that is, for $\bar{g}=c^{2} g$, for $c>0$, one gets $\bar{A}=c^{-2 l} A, \bar{\lambda}_{j}=c^{-2 l} \lambda_{j}$ and

$$
\zeta_{\bar{A}}(s)=\sum_{\bar{\lambda}_{j} \neq 0}\left|\bar{\lambda}_{j}\right|^{-s}=c^{2 l s} \zeta_{A}(s)
$$

Hence, although $\zeta_{\bar{A}}(0)=\zeta_{A}(0)$, while

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left.\frac{d}{d s}\right|_{s=0} \zeta_{\bar{A}}(s) & =\left(\log c^{2 l}\right) \zeta_{A}(0)+\zeta_{A}^{\prime}(0) \\
\Rightarrow e^{-\zeta_{\bar{A}}^{\prime}(0)} & =e^{-\left(\log c^{2 l}\right) \zeta_{A}(0)-\zeta_{A}^{\prime}(0)} \\
& =c^{-2 l \zeta_{A}(0)} \exp \left(-\zeta_{A}^{\prime}(0)\right), \text { that is } \\
\operatorname{det} \bar{A} & =c^{-2 l \zeta_{A}(0)} \operatorname{det} A
\end{aligned}
$$

This observation motivates the following definition:

$$
\begin{equation*}
P\left(A_{g}\right):=(\operatorname{Vol}(M, g))^{\frac{2 l \zeta_{A}(0)}{n}} \operatorname{det} A \tag{5.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
P\left(\bar{A}_{\bar{g}}\right) & =(\operatorname{Vol}(M, \bar{g}))^{\frac{2 l \zeta_{\bar{A}}(0)}{n}} \operatorname{det} \bar{A} \\
& =(\operatorname{Vol}(M, g))^{\frac{2 l \zeta_{A}(0)}{n}} c^{2 l \zeta_{A}(0)} \operatorname{det} \bar{A} \\
& =(\operatorname{Vol}(M, g))^{\frac{2 l \zeta_{A}(0)}{n}} \operatorname{det} A \\
& =P\left(A_{g}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

since $\operatorname{vol}(M, \bar{g})=c^{n} \operatorname{Vol}(M, g)$ for $\bar{g}=c^{2} g, c>0$. Thus $P\left(A_{g}\right)$ is a scale invariant quantity.

The following conformal index theorem is due to Branson and Orsted [14].
Theorem 5.1 (Branson-Orsted) Assume that $A$ is as above and conformally covariant (or a positive integral power of conformally covariant operators). For simplicity assume that

$$
N(A):=\#\left\{j: \lambda_{j}=0\right\}=0
$$

Then for $a_{k}\left(A_{g}\right):=a_{k}\left(1, A_{g}\right)$

$$
\begin{gather*}
\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} a_{k}\left(A_{g_{w+\varepsilon f}}\right)=(n-k) a_{k}\left(f, A_{g_{w}}\right)  \tag{5.5}\\
\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} \zeta_{A_{g_{w+\varepsilon f}}}^{\prime}(0)=2 l a_{n}\left(f, A_{g_{w}}\right) \tag{5.6}
\end{gather*}
$$

Notice that (5.5) for $k=n$ implies that $a_{n}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)$ is conformally invariant. We can compute $\zeta_{A_{g_{w}}}^{\prime}(0)-\zeta_{A_{g}}^{\prime}(0)=-\log \frac{\left|\operatorname{det} A_{g_{w}}\right|}{\left|\operatorname{det} A_{g}\right|}=-\log \frac{\operatorname{det} A_{g_{w}}}{\operatorname{det} A_{g}}$, using the fact that the number of negative eigenvalues appearing in the definition (5.3) is conformally invariant for conformally covariant operators.

In terms of the scale invariant quantity $P_{A}(g)$, the last quotient may be rewritten as

$$
-\log \frac{P\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)}{P\left(A_{g}\right)}=-\frac{2 l \zeta_{A}(0)}{n} \log \frac{\operatorname{Vol}\left(M, g_{w}\right)}{\operatorname{Vol}(M, g)}-\log \frac{\operatorname{det} A_{g_{w}}}{\operatorname{det} A_{g}}
$$

By (5.6) we arrive at

$$
\begin{align*}
\zeta_{A_{g_{w}}}^{\prime}(0)-\zeta_{A_{g}}^{\prime}(0) & =\int_{0}^{1} \frac{d}{d t} \zeta_{A_{g_{t w}}^{\prime}}^{\prime}(0) d t  \tag{5.7}\\
& =2 l \int_{0}^{1} a_{n}\left(w, A_{g_{t w}}\right) d t
\end{align*}
$$

by the simple identity $\left.\frac{d}{d \varepsilon}\right|_{\varepsilon=0} \zeta_{A_{g_{t w+\varepsilon w}}}^{\prime}(0)=\frac{d}{d t} \zeta_{A_{g_{t w}}}^{\prime}(0)$.
Remark 5.2 When $n$ is odd, $a_{n} \equiv 0$ for compact closed n-manifolds. Hence $\log \operatorname{det} A_{g_{w}}$ is a constant, compare to (3.6).

We now focus on the case $n=4$. Assuming $N(A)=N\left(A_{g}\right)=0$ as in Theorem 5.1, then we have

Lemma 5.3 Let $A$ be as in Theorem 5.1 on $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right), M$ compact and closed, with $l=1$. Then there are constants $\gamma_{1}, \gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}$ depending on $A$ but not on $g_{0}$, such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
B_{4}\left(A_{g}\right)=\gamma_{1}\left|W_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}+\gamma_{2} Q_{g}-\gamma_{3} \Delta_{g} R_{g}  \tag{5.8}\\
\left|W_{g_{w}}\right|_{g_{w}}^{2}=e^{-4 w}\left|W_{g_{0}}\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}  \tag{5.9}\\
R_{g_{w}}=e^{-2 w}\left(R_{g}-6 \Delta_{0} w-6\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}\right)  \tag{5.10}\\
\Delta_{g_{w}} R_{g_{w}}=\delta_{g_{w}} d_{g_{w}} R_{g_{w}}  \tag{5.11}\\
=e^{-4 w}\left(\Delta_{0} R_{g_{0}}+b_{1}(w)+b_{2}(w)+b_{3}(w)\right)
\end{gather*}
$$

with

$$
\begin{aligned}
& b_{1}(w)=-6 \Delta_{0}^{2} w-2 \Delta_{0} w R_{g_{0}}-2\left\langle\nabla_{0} w, \nabla_{0} R_{g_{0}}\right\rangle_{g_{0}} \\
& b_{2}(w)=-6 \Delta_{0}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}\right)+12\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2}+12\left\langle\nabla_{0} w, \nabla_{0} \Delta_{0} w\right\rangle_{g_{0}} \\
& b_{3}(w)=12 \Delta_{0} w\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}+12\left\langle\nabla_{0} w, \nabla_{0}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}\right)\right\rangle_{g_{0}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where each $b_{i}(w)$ is homogeneous of degree $i$ in $w$.

## Remarks.

1. Recall (4.12), i.e., $12 Q_{g}:=R_{g}^{2}-3\left|\operatorname{Ric}_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}-\Delta_{g} R_{g}$. In general, there are only four possible metric invariants of order 4, namely $R_{g}^{2},\left|\operatorname{Ric}_{g}\right|_{g}^{2},\left|W_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}$ and $\Delta_{g} R_{g}$, a linear combination of which furnishes $B_{k}\left(A_{g}\right)$. Apart from $\left|W_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}$ these are not pointwise conformal invariants, only the integral of them is. Moreover, the conformal covariance of $A$, i.e. $b-a=2$, enforces the ratio $R_{g}^{2}:\left|\operatorname{Ric}_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}$ to be $1:-3$, which allows us to express $B_{k}\left(A_{g}\right)$ in terms of $\left|W_{g}\right|_{g}^{2}, \Delta_{g} R_{g}$ and $Q_{g}$.
2. The negative divergence introduced for the Paneitz operator (Example 3 in Chapter 4) satisfies the covariance relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{g_{w}} \alpha=e^{-4 w} \delta_{g} e^{2 w \alpha} \tag{5.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any 1-form $\alpha$, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
d_{g_{w}} f=d_{g} f \tag{5.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any function $f$.
Sketch of the proof of Lemma 5.3. The fact that (5.8) holds true is made plausible in the first remark above and (5.10) is a direct consequence of the conformal covariance of $A$. For the conformal Laplacian, $A=L$, one obtains (recall (4.4) in Chapter 4) for $n=4$,

$$
L_{g_{w}}(\varphi)=e^{-3 w} L_{g_{0}}\left(e^{w} \varphi\right) \text { for all } \varphi \in C^{\infty}(M)
$$

and setting $\varphi \equiv 1$

$$
-\Delta_{g_{w}}(1)+\frac{R_{g_{w}}}{6}=e^{-3 w}\left(-\Delta_{0}\left(e^{w}\right)+\frac{R_{g_{0}}}{6} e^{w}\right)
$$

which implies (5.10) (for $A=L$ ), since $\frac{\Delta_{0} e^{w}}{e^{w}}=\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}$.
The identity (5.11) follows from a straightforward computation using (5.12) and (5.10).

Recalling (4.11) one deduces from (5.8) - (5.11) that

$$
\begin{equation*}
B_{4}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=e^{-4 w}\left(B_{4}\left(A_{g_{0}}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \gamma_{2}\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}} w-\gamma_{3}\left(b_{1}(w)+b_{2}(w)+b_{3}(w)\right)\right. \tag{5.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}}$ denotes the Paneitz operator with respect to the background metric $g_{0}$.

Under the assumption that $A$ does not have zero eigenvalues, i.e. $N(A)=0$, we can go back to (5.7) to compute the $\log$ determinant (for $l=1$ ):

$$
\begin{align*}
& -\log \frac{\operatorname{det} A_{g_{w}}}{\operatorname{det} A_{g_{0}}}=\zeta_{A_{g_{w}}}^{\prime}(0)-\zeta_{A_{g_{0}}}^{\prime}(0) \\
& =2 \int_{0}^{1}\left[\int_{M} w B_{4}\left(A_{g_{t w}}\right) d v_{g_{t w}}\right] d t \\
& =2 \int_{0.14)}^{1}\left[\int_{M} w\left(B_{4}\left(A_{g_{0}}\right)+\frac{1}{2} \gamma_{2} t\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}} w-\gamma_{3}\left(t b_{1}(w)+t^{2} b_{2}(w)+t^{3} b_{3}(w)\right)\right) e^{-4 t w} d v_{g_{t w}}\right] d t \\
& =2 \int_{M} w\left(B_{4}\left(A_{g_{0}}\right)+\frac{1}{4} \gamma_{2}\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}} w-\gamma_{3}\left(\frac{1}{2} b_{1}(w)+\frac{1}{3} b_{2}(w)+\frac{1}{4} b_{3}(w)\right)\right) d v_{0}, \tag{5.15}
\end{align*}
$$

where we used $d v_{g_{t w}}=e^{4 t w} d v_{0}$ and the homogeneity of the $b_{i}, i=1,2,3$. In terms of the scale-invariant expression $P(A)$,

$$
-\log P\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)+\log P\left(A_{g_{0}}\right)=-\log \frac{\operatorname{det} A_{g_{w}}}{\operatorname{det} A_{g_{0}}}-\frac{1}{2} \zeta_{A}(0) \log \frac{\operatorname{Vol}\left(M, g_{w}\right)}{\operatorname{Vol}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}
$$

where

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\zeta_{A}(0)=\int_{M} B_{4}\left(A_{g_{0}}\right) d v_{0} \underset{(5.8)}{=} \int_{M}\left(\gamma_{1}\left|W_{g_{0}}\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}+\gamma_{2} Q_{g_{0}}-\gamma_{3} \Delta_{0} R_{g_{0}}\right) d v_{0} \\
=\gamma_{1} \int_{M}\left|W_{g_{0}}\right|_{g_{0}}^{2} d v_{0}+\gamma_{2} \int_{M} Q_{g_{0}} d v_{0} \tag{5.16}
\end{array}
$$

Thus we have
Theorem 5.4 (Branson-Orsted)[14] Let $A$ be as in Lemma 5.3, then

$$
F_{A}[w]:=-2 \log \frac{P\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)}{P\left(A_{g_{0}}\right)}=\gamma_{1} \mathrm{I}[w]+\gamma_{2} \mathrm{II}[w]+\gamma_{3} \mathrm{III}[w]
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{I}[w] & :=4 \int_{M} w\left|W_{g_{0}}\right|_{g_{0}}^{2} d v_{0}-\int_{M}\left|W_{g_{0}}\right|_{g_{0}}^{2} d v_{0} \log f_{M} e^{4 w} d v_{0} \\
\mathrm{II}[w] & :=\int_{M}\left(w\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}} w+4 w Q_{g_{0}}\right) d v_{0}-\int_{M} Q_{g_{0}} d v_{0} \log f_{M} e^{4 w} d v_{0} \\
\mathrm{III}[w] & :=-4 \int_{M}\left(w \Delta_{0} R_{g_{0}}+\frac{1}{2} w b_{1}(w)+\frac{1}{3} w b_{2}(w)+\frac{1}{4} w b_{3}(w)\right) d v_{0} \\
& =\frac{1}{3}\left(\int_{M} R_{g_{w}}^{2} d v_{g_{w}}-\int_{M} R_{g_{0}}^{2} d v_{0}\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

## Remarks.

1. The last equality in the expression III can be obtained by an integration by parts. Notice that by (5.10), $R_{g_{w}}^{2} d v_{g_{w}}=R_{g_{w}}^{2} e^{4 w} d v_{0}=\left(R_{g_{0}}-6 \Delta_{0} w-\right.$ $\left.6\left|\nabla_{g} w\right|_{g_{0}}^{2}\right)^{2} d v_{0}$.
2. For $A=L=-\Delta+R / 6$ the ratios between the $\gamma_{i}$ are as follows, see [14],

$$
(4 \pi)^{2} 180\left(\gamma_{1}, \gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}\right)=\left(1,-4,-\frac{2}{3}\right)
$$

For the square of the Dirac operator $A=\nabla^{2}(\boldsymbol{\nabla}$ is a conformally covariant operator of bidegree $\left.\left(\frac{5}{2}, \frac{3}{2}\right)\right)$ one has

$$
(4 \pi)^{2} 360\left(\gamma_{1}, \gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}\right)=\left(-7,88, \frac{28}{6}\right)
$$

Notice that $\gamma_{2} \gamma_{3}>0$ in both examples.
In Branson's notation [10] our ( $\gamma_{1}, \gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}$ ) correspond to $\left(\beta_{1}, \beta_{2}, \beta_{3} / 6\right)$.

Let us now recall some facts about the Yamabe metric. Given ( $M^{n}, g_{0}$ ) compact without boundary, one defines

$$
Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right):=\inf _{g_{w} \in\left[g_{0}\right]} \frac{\int_{M} R_{g_{w}} d v_{g_{w}}}{\left(\int_{M} d v_{g_{w}}\right)^{\frac{n-2}{n}}}
$$

which is called the Yamabe constant, a conformally invariant quantity. Here [ $g_{0}$ ] denotes the class of all metrics that are conformal to the background metric $g_{0}$. One central result regarding the Yamabe constant is due to Yamabe [92], Trudinger [88], Aubin [4] and Schoen [82]:

Theorem 5.5 (i) $\operatorname{sign}\left(Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right)\right)=\operatorname{sign}\left(\lambda_{1}\left(L_{g_{0}}\right)\right)$, where $\lambda_{1}$ denotes the first eigenvalue of the conformal Laplacian $L_{g_{0}}$.
(ii) $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right) \leq Y\left(S^{n}, g_{c}\right)$ with equality iff $\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right)$ is conformal equivalent to $\left(S^{n}, g_{c}\right)$.
(iii) $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right)$ is attained by some metric $g_{w} \in\left[g_{0}\right]$ with $R_{g_{w}} \equiv$ const.. This metric is referred to as the Yamabe metric and often denoted by $g_{Y}$.

Proof. Since we are going to need only the first part, we will restrict our attention to proving (i).

Let $g_{0}$ be the background metric. For any $u \in C^{\infty}(M), u>0$, set $\bar{g}_{u}:=$ $u^{\frac{4}{n-2}} g_{0}$, then

$$
R_{\bar{g}_{u}}=\frac{1}{C_{n}} u^{-\frac{n+2}{n-2}} L_{g_{0}} u
$$

where $L_{g_{0}} u=-\Delta_{0} u+C_{n} R_{g_{0}} u$ is the conformal Lapalcian, $C_{n}=\frac{n-2}{4(n-1)}$. It follows that

$$
\int_{M} R_{\bar{g}_{u}} d v_{\bar{g}_{u}}=\frac{1}{C_{n}} \int_{M} u L_{g_{0}} u d v_{0}=\frac{1}{C_{n}} \int_{M}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2}+C_{n} R_{g_{0}} u^{2}\right) d v_{0}
$$

Let $\phi_{1}$ be the first eigenfunction of $L_{g_{0}}$ with $\left\|\phi_{1}\right\|_{L^{2}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}=1$. Then $\phi_{1} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ and it does not change sign. We may assume that $\phi_{1}>0$. Note that

$$
\frac{\int_{M} R_{\bar{g}_{\phi_{1}}} d v_{\bar{g}_{\phi_{1}}}}{\left(\int_{M} d v_{\bar{g}_{\phi_{1}}}\right)^{\frac{n-2}{n}}}=\frac{\lambda_{1}}{C_{n}\left\|\phi_{1}\right\|_{L^{\frac{2 n}{n-2}}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}^{2}}
$$

Thus if $\lambda_{1}<0$, then $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right)<0$.
If $\lambda_{1}=0$, then the above formula shows that $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right) \leq 0$; while we also have $\int_{M} R_{\bar{g}_{u}} d v_{\bar{g}_{u}}=\frac{1}{C_{n}} \int_{M} u L_{g_{0}} u d v_{0} \geq 0$ for all $u \geq 0$. Thus $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right) \geq 0$. Hence $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right)=0$.

If $\lambda_{1}>0$, then for any $u \in C^{\infty}(M), u>0, \int_{M} u L_{g_{0}} u d v_{0} \geq \lambda_{1}\|u\|_{L^{2}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}^{2}$. On the other hand we also have

$$
\int_{M} u L_{g_{0}} u d v_{0} \geq\|u\|_{H^{1}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}^{2}-C\left(g_{0}\right)\|u\|_{L^{2}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}^{2}
$$

Thus we have

$$
\int_{M} u L_{g_{0}} u d v_{0} \geq C_{g_{0}}\|u\|_{H^{1}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}^{2} \geq C_{g_{0}}\|u\|_{L^{\frac{2 n}{n-2}}\left(M, g_{0}\right)}^{2}
$$

by the Sobolev imbedding inequality. Hence

$$
\frac{\int_{M} R_{\bar{g}_{u}} d v_{\bar{g}_{u}}}{\left(\int_{M} d v_{\bar{g}_{u}}\right)^{\frac{n-2}{n}}} \geq C\left(g_{0}\right)>0
$$

That is $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right) \geq C\left(g_{0}\right)>0$.
For (ii) and (iii) we refer to [4], [82].
Notice that if $Y\left(M^{n}, g_{0}\right) \geq 0$, then taking the Yamabe metric $g_{Y}\left(\Rightarrow R_{g_{Y}} \equiv\right.$ const. $\geq 0$ according to part (iii) of the previous theorem), we are led to the estimate $\left(\right.$ taking $\operatorname{Vol}\left(M, g_{w}\right)=\operatorname{Vol}\left(M, g_{Y}\right)=1$ for simplicity $)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M} R_{g_{w}}^{2} d v_{g_{w}} & \geq\left(\int_{M} R_{g_{w}} d v_{g_{w}}\right)^{2} \\
& \geq\left(\int_{M} R_{g_{Y}} d v_{g_{Y}}\right)^{2}=\int_{M} R_{g_{Y}}^{2} d v_{g_{Y}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus III $[w] \geq 0$ for all $w$ in Theorem 5.4 , and it is zero only when $R_{g_{w}}=R_{g_{Y}}$. We take this as indication that it is very non-trivial to achieve the infimum of $\operatorname{III}[w]$.

Before discussing extremal problems for the zeta functional determinant $F[\cdot]$ in Theorem 5.4 on general manifolds, we turn our attention to studying extremal metrics on $S^{4}$ with respect to the conformal Laplacian:

Theorem 5.6 (Branson-Chang-Yang) [12] On $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right) \operatorname{det} L_{g_{w}}$ is minimized for $g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{c}$, with the volume constraint $\operatorname{Vol}\left(S^{4}, g_{w}\right)=\operatorname{Vol}\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)=\frac{8 \pi^{2}}{3}=\left|S^{4}\right|$, iff $g_{w}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$ for some conformal transformation $\phi: S^{4} \rightarrow S^{4}$, i.e. $g_{w}$ and $g_{c}$ are isometric.

The theorem above should be viewed as a 4-dimensional analogue of the Onofri inequality in Theorem 3.1 and Corollary 3.2.

## Remarks.

1. For the Dirac operator $\nabla^{2}$ one gets det $\nabla_{g_{w}}^{2}$ is maximized iff $g_{w}$ is isometric to $g_{c}$.
2. On $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$ one has $\left|W_{g_{c}}\right|_{g_{c}}^{2} \equiv 0$, hence $\mathrm{I}[w] \equiv 0, \mathrm{II}[w] \geq 0$ with equality iff $g_{w}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$ and $\operatorname{III}[w] \geq 0$ as pointed out before, since $g_{c}=g_{Y}$, here, with $R_{g_{c}} \equiv 12$, and equlity iff $g_{w}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$.
3. We may view the fact that $\mathrm{II}[w] \geq 0$ as a special case of Beckner's inequality [7], stated for general operators $P_{n}$ on $\left(S^{n}, g_{c}\right)$, given by

$$
\left(P_{n}\right)_{g_{c}}:=\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\Pi_{k=0}^{\frac{n-2}{2}}\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}+k(n-k-1)\right), \text { for } n \text { even } \\
\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}+\left(\frac{n-1}{2}\right)^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \Pi_{k=0}^{\frac{n-3}{2}}\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}+k(n-k-1)\right), \text { for } n \text { odd }
\end{array}\right.
$$

Branson [9] pointed out that these operators $P_{n}$ may be obtained by conformally pulling back the operator $(-\Delta)^{n / 2}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ via stereographic projection $\pi: S^{n}-\{\mathbb{N}\} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^{n}$; where $\mathbb{N}$ denotes the north pole of the sphere $S^{n}$. For instance, for $n=2$ one obtains the Laplacian $\Delta_{g_{c}}$ on $S^{2}$ by conformally pulling back $-\Delta$ on $\mathbb{R}^{2}$, whereas for $n=4$ one gets the Paneitz operator

$$
\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{c}}=\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right)\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}+\frac{1}{6} R_{g_{c}}\right)=\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right)\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}+2\right)
$$

compare with Example 3b of Chapter 4.
Beckner's inequality states

$$
\log f_{S^{n}} e^{n w} d v_{g_{c}} \leq n f_{S^{n}} w d v_{g_{c}}+\frac{n}{2(n-1)!} f_{S^{n}} w P_{n}(w) d v_{g_{c}}
$$

with equality iff $g_{w}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$.
For $n=2$ this reduces to Onofri's inequality (Theorem 2.11), while for $n=4$ Beckner's inequality implies $\operatorname{II}[w] \geq 0$, since on $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right), Q_{g_{c}} \equiv 3$ according to (4.12) with $R_{g_{c}} \equiv 12$.
4. For more general results we give the following overview:

| standard <br> metric $g_{c}$ <br> on | is a | for the <br> operator | among metrics <br> with fixed | proved <br> by |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $S^{2}$ | global max <br> global min | $\operatorname{det}(-\Delta)$ <br> $\operatorname{det} \nabla^{2}$ | area <br> area | Onofri [72] |
| $S^{4}$ | global min <br> global max | $\operatorname{det} L$ <br> $\operatorname{det} \nabla^{2}$ | volume <br> \&conformal <br> class | Branson Chang Yang [12] |
| $S^{6}$ | global max <br> global min | $\operatorname{det} L$ <br> $\operatorname{det} \nabla^{2}$ | $\left\{\begin{array}{c}\text { volume } \\ \text { \&conformal } \\ \text { class }\end{array}\right.$ | Branson [11] |
| $S^{3}$ | local max <br> local max | $\operatorname{det}(-\Delta)$ <br> $\operatorname{det}(-\Delta)$ | volume \& conformal <br> class <br> volume | K. Richardson [80] |
| $S^{2 n+1}, n \geq 3$ | saddle point | $\operatorname{det}(-\Delta)$ | volume \& conformal <br> class | K. Okikiolu [70] |
| $S^{4 n+1}$ |  |  |  |  |
| $S^{4 n+3}$ | local min <br> local max | $\operatorname{det} L$ <br> $\operatorname{det} L$ | \} volume | K. Okikiolu [70] |

Here $L$ denotes the conformal Laplace operator. The results by Okikiolu, [70] especially the result that on the 3 -sphere $S^{3}$. $\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g_{c}}\right)$ is a local maximum of the functional $\operatorname{det}\left(-\Delta_{g}\right)$ among all metrics $g$ (not only the ones conformal to $g_{c}$ ) defined on $S^{3}$, are truly remarkable. An important tool in her work is the computation of the canonical trace of odd operators in odd dimensions. In a separate paper [69], she has also given an alternative proof of Polyakov's formula, Theorem 3.1, using the calculus of pseudo-differential operators.

## § 6 Extremal metrics for the log-determinant functional

We study the extremal metric for the functional $F_{A}[w]$ given in Theorem 5.4 by Branson and Orsted. As a basic tool we will need the following generalization of Moser's inequality, Adam's inequality.

Lemma 6.1 (Adam [1]) Let $\Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}$ be a bounded domain, and suppose $k<n$. Then there are constants $c=c(k, n), \beta_{0}=\beta_{0}(k, n)$, such that for all $w \in C_{0}^{k}(\Omega)$ with $\left\|\nabla^{k} w\right\|_{p} \leq 1, p=\frac{n}{k}$, we have

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{\Omega} \exp \left(\beta|w(x)|^{p^{\prime}}\right) d x \leq c|\Omega| \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $\beta \leq \beta_{0}$, and $p^{\prime}:=p /(p-1)$.
This inequality is sharp in the following sense: If $\beta>\beta_{0}$, then for any $N \in \mathbb{N}$ there exists $u_{N} \in C_{0}^{\infty}(\Omega)$ with $\left\|\nabla^{k} u_{N}\right\|_{p} \leq 1$, such that

$$
\int_{\Omega} \exp \left(\beta\left|u_{N}(x)\right|^{p^{\prime}}\right) d x>N|\Omega|
$$

Notice that we denote

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left\|\nabla^{k} u\right\|:=\left\|\Delta^{k / 2} u\right\| \quad \text { for } k \text { even } \\
& \left\|\nabla^{k} u\right\|:=\left\|\nabla \Delta^{\frac{k-1}{2}} u\right\| \text { for } k \text { odd. }
\end{aligned}
$$

If $n=4, k=2$, whence $p=p^{\prime}=2$, then $\beta_{0}=\beta_{0}(2,4)=32 \pi^{2}$. On a compact 4-manifold, Lemma 6.1 takes the following form (cf. [12], [46] for general $M^{n}$ ):

Lemma 6.2 On $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ compact, closed, there exists a constant $c_{0}=c_{0}\left(g_{0}\right)$ such that for all $w \in C^{2}(M)$ with $\left\|\Delta_{0} w\right\|_{2} \leq 1$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} \exp \left(32 \pi^{2}|w-\bar{w}|^{2}\right) d v_{0} \leq c_{0} \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Corollary 6.3 On $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ as above one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
\log f_{M} e^{4(w-\bar{w})} d v_{0} \leq \log c_{0}+\frac{1}{8 \pi^{2}}\left\|\Delta_{0} w\right\|_{2}^{2} \tag{6.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

(6.3) follows from (6.2) in the same way as Corollary 1.7 was deduced from Corollary 1.6 in the first chapter.

Define for a metric $g$ on $M$

$$
\begin{equation*}
k_{g}:=\int_{M} Q_{g} d v_{g} \tag{6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is a conformally invariant constant, i.e., $k_{g}=k_{g_{0}}=\int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0}$ for $g=g_{w}=$ $e^{2 w} g_{0}$. Due to the Chern-Gauss-Bonnet formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
4 \pi^{2} \chi\left(M^{4}\right)=\frac{1}{8} \int_{M}|W|^{2} d v+\int_{M} Q d v \tag{6.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Suppose in the following that $\gamma_{2}<0$ in the representation of $F_{A}[w]$ given in Theorem 5.4 (otherwise consider $\left(-F_{A}\right)$ instead).

Lemma 6.4 Assume that $\gamma_{2}<0$, and $\gamma_{2} \gamma_{3}>0$. Let $c_{1}, c_{2} \in \mathbb{R}$ be given constants with $c_{2}>0$ and suppose that

$$
\begin{equation*}
k_{g_{0}}<8 \pi^{2}-\frac{\gamma_{1}}{\gamma_{2}} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0} \tag{6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then for all $w \in \mathcal{S}_{c_{1}, c_{2}}(A)$, where

$$
\mathcal{S}_{c_{1}, c_{2}}(A):=\left\{w \in C^{\infty}(M):\left(\operatorname{sign} \gamma_{2}\right) F_{A}[w] \leq c_{1}, \operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w}\right)=c_{2} \operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{0}\right)\right\}
$$

one has the uniform estimate

$$
\begin{equation*}
\|w\|_{W^{2,2}} \leq C\left(c_{1}, c_{2}, A, g_{0}\right) \tag{6.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark. If we assume for simplicity that $A=L$, as we did in the proof of Lemma 5.3, we have

$$
(4 \pi)^{2} 180\left(\gamma_{1}, \gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}\right)=\left(1,-4,-\frac{2}{3}\right)
$$

according to the second remark following Theorem 5.4. Hence the condition on $k_{g_{0}}$ in Lemma 6.4 reads as

$$
k_{g_{0}}<8 \pi^{2}+\frac{1}{4} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}
$$

Proof of Lemma 6.4. We will show that, under the assumptions $\gamma_{2} \gamma_{3}>0$ and (6.6), the terms II $[w]$ and III $[w]$ in the representation for $F_{A}[w]$ add up to some multiple of the $W^{2,2}$-norm of $w$. All the terms involving the background metric $g_{0}$ will carry a sub - or superscript " 0 ", whereas $g=g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$ will not be indicated explicitly, i.e., e.g., $\nabla_{g_{0}}=\nabla_{0}$, but $\nabla_{g}=\nabla$.

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{II}[w]= & \int_{M}\left(w, P_{40} w\right)_{0} d v_{0}+4 \int_{M} Q_{0}(w-\bar{w}) d v_{0} \\
& -\int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0} \log f_{M} e^{4(w-\bar{w})} d v_{0} \\
= & \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\frac{2}{3} \int_{M} R_{0}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}  \tag{6.8}\\
& -2 \int_{M} \operatorname{Ric}_{0}\left(\nabla_{0} w, \nabla_{0} w\right) d v_{0}+4 \int Q_{0}(w-\bar{w}) d v_{0} \\
& -\int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0} \log f_{M} e^{4(w-\bar{w})} d v_{0}
\end{align*}
$$

For III $[w]$ one computes

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{III}[w] & =\frac{1}{3}\left(\int_{M} R^{2} d v-\int_{M} R_{0}^{2} d v_{0}\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{3} \int_{M}\left[36\left(\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right)^{2}-12 R_{0}\left(\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right)\right] d v_{0}  \tag{6.9}\\
& =12 \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right)^{2} d v_{0}-4 \int_{M} R_{0}\left(\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right) d v_{0}
\end{align*}
$$

where we used (5.10), compare with Remark 1 after Theorem 5.4. The assumption on $k_{g_{0}}$ may be rewritten as

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\gamma_{2} \int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0}-\gamma_{1} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}<-\gamma_{2} 8 \pi^{2} \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $\gamma_{2}<0$. This implies by (6.3)

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[-\gamma_{2} \int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0}\right.} & \left.-\gamma_{1} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}\right] \log f_{M} e^{4(w-\bar{w})} d v_{0} \\
& <-\gamma_{2} 8 \pi^{2}\left(\frac{1}{8 \pi^{2}} \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+c_{0}\right)  \tag{6.11}\\
& =-\gamma_{2} \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}-8 \pi^{2} \gamma_{2} c_{0}
\end{align*}
$$

Because of the strict inequality in (6.10) we may rewrite the left-hand side of (6.11) as

$$
\begin{align*}
{\left[-\gamma_{2} \int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0}\right.} & \left.-\gamma_{1} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}\right] \log f_{M} e^{4(w-\bar{w})} d v_{0}  \tag{6.12}\\
\leq & \left(-\gamma_{2}-\varepsilon\right) \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+C
\end{align*}
$$

for some $\varepsilon>0$.
Inserting (6.8), (6.9) and (6.12) into the expression for $F_{A}[w]$ we can estimate

$$
\begin{aligned}
F_{A}[w] \leq & \left(\gamma_{2}+12 \gamma_{3}-\gamma_{2}-\varepsilon\right) \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0} \\
& +24 \gamma_{3} \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}+12 \gamma_{3} \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{4} d v_{0} \\
& + \text { lower order terms in } w .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since $\varepsilon>0, \gamma_{2}<0, \gamma_{2} \gamma_{3}>0$, we obtain by Young's inequality and the Sobolev embedding $W^{1,4} \hookrightarrow W^{2,2}$, that first

$$
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} \leq C\left(c_{1}, c_{2}, F_{A}[w]\right)
$$

and then

$$
\int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0} \leq C\left(c_{1}, c_{2}, F_{A}[w]\right)
$$

Lemma 6.4 now implies
Theorem 6.5 ([33]) If $\gamma_{2}<0, \gamma_{2} \gamma_{3}>0$, and if

$$
k_{g_{0}}<8 \pi^{2}-\frac{\gamma_{1}}{\gamma_{2}} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}
$$

then there exists an extremal metric $g=g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$ with $w \in W^{2,2}(M)$,

$$
F_{A}[w]=\sup _{\mathcal{S}_{c_{1}, c_{2}}(A)} F_{A}[\cdot]
$$

satisfying (in terms of the metric $g$ )

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+\gamma_{2} Q-\gamma_{3} \Delta R=\gamma_{1} \int_{M}|W|^{2} d v+\gamma_{2} \int_{M} Q d v \equiv \text { const. } \tag{6.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ according to [25].
Notice that this result applies to the conformal Laplacian $A:=L$, where $\left(\gamma_{1}, \gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}\right) \sim(1,-4,-2 / 3)$, if $k_{g_{0}}<8 \pi^{2}+(1 / 4) \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}$.

Regarding regularity even more is true:
Theorem 6.6 (Uhlenbeck-Viaclovsky [89]) Any critical point of $F_{A}[\cdot]$ of class $W^{2,2}(M)$ is $C^{\infty}$-smooth.

Our next goal is to derive an application of Theorem 6.5 given by Gursky, see Theorem 6.7. Denote

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{2}:=\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{12} R^{2}-|E|^{2}\right) \tag{6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

(in terms of some metric $g$ on $M$ ), where $E$ is the Einstein tensor on $M$, and recall the identity

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { Ric }=E+\frac{R}{4} g \tag{6.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

to conclude by (4.12), and the fact that $\operatorname{Tr} E \equiv 0$,

$$
\begin{align*}
12 Q & =-\Delta R+R^{2}-3|\mathrm{Ric}|^{2} \\
& =-\Delta R+\frac{1}{4} R^{2}-3|E|^{2} \\
& =-\Delta R+3\left(\frac{1}{12} R^{2}-|E|^{2}\right)  \tag{6.16}\\
& =-\Delta R+6 \sigma_{2}
\end{align*}
$$

(The notation $\sigma_{2}$ is motivated by more general considerations regarding elementary symmetric functions $\sigma_{k}$ of the eigenvalues of geometric tensors, see Chapter 7.)

Two alternative formulations of Theorem 6.5 turn out quite useful later on: Theorem 6.5' If $\gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}<0$, and if

$$
k_{g_{0}}=\int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0}<8 \pi^{2}-\frac{\gamma_{1}}{\gamma_{2}} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}
$$

or equivalently, if

$$
k_{d}:=\gamma_{1} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}+\gamma_{2} \int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0}>\gamma_{2} 8 \pi^{2}
$$

then there is $w_{d} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ such that

$$
F_{A}\left[w_{d}\right]=\sup _{\mathcal{S}_{c_{1}, c_{2}}(A)} F_{A}[\cdot]
$$

and in terms of the metric $g=g_{w_{d}}=e^{2 w_{d}} g_{0}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+\gamma_{2} Q-\gamma_{3} \Delta R \equiv \frac{k_{d}}{\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w_{d}}\right)} \tag{6.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

As it is sometimes more convenient to take $\gamma_{2}$ and $\gamma_{3}$ to be positive numbers instead of negative numbers; we may take $\operatorname{infF_{A}}$ instead of $\sup F_{A}$ and restate Theorem 6.5' as :
Theorem 6.5" If $\gamma_{2}, \gamma_{3}>0, k_{d}<\gamma_{2} 8 \pi^{2}$, then there exists $w_{d} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ with

$$
F_{A}\left[w_{d}\right]=\inf _{\mathcal{S}_{c_{1}, c_{2}}(A)} F_{A}[\cdot]
$$

such that in terms of the metric $g=g_{w_{d}}=e^{2 w_{d}} g_{0}$, (6.17) holds, or equivalently,

$$
\begin{gather*}
\gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+\gamma_{2}\left(-\frac{1}{12} \Delta R+\frac{1}{2} \sigma_{2}\right)-\gamma_{3} \Delta R=\frac{k_{d}}{\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w_{d}}\right)} \\
\Leftrightarrow-\left(\frac{1}{12} \gamma_{2}+\gamma_{3}\right) \Delta R=-\gamma_{1}|W|^{2}-\frac{1}{2} \gamma_{2} \sigma_{2}+\frac{k_{d}}{\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w_{d}}\right)} \\
\Leftrightarrow \Delta R=\lambda+\alpha|W|^{2}+\beta \sigma_{2}, \tag{6.18}
\end{gather*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gathered}
\lambda:=-\frac{k_{d}}{\operatorname{vol}\left(M, g_{w_{d}}\right)}\left(\frac{1}{12} \gamma_{2}+\gamma_{3}\right)^{-1} \leq 0 \\
\alpha:=\gamma_{1}\left(\frac{1}{12} \gamma_{2}+\gamma_{3}\right)^{-1} \leq 0, \text { and where } \\
\beta:=\frac{1}{2} \gamma_{2}\left(\frac{1}{12} \gamma_{2}+\gamma_{3}\right)^{-1}
\end{gathered}
$$

Theorem 6.7 (Gursky [54]) If $Y\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)>0$, and if $k_{g_{0}} \geq 0$, then the Paneitz operator $\left(P_{4}\right)_{g_{0}}=P_{0}$ is positive, with $\lambda_{1}\left(P_{0}\right)=0$ and $\operatorname{ker}\left(P_{0}\right)=\{\mathbb{R}\}$.

## Remarks.

1. Both $Y\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ and $k_{g}$ are conformally invariant quantities, hence the assumptions above are natural, since $P_{4}$ is conformally covariant of bidegree $(0,4)$, see (4.10). This implies that $\operatorname{ker}(P)$ is a conformally invariant set.
2. The proof of Theorem 6.7 will be used to prove the main result in Chapter 7.
3. It is unclear, whether the assumptions $Y\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)>0, k_{g_{0}} \geq 0$ are also necessary to obtain $P_{0}$ to be positive. Notice that there are indeed Paneitz operators with some negative eigenvalues. For instance, let $\Sigma$ be the genus 2 hyperbolic surface and $M:=\Sigma \times \Sigma$ with $\lambda_{1}\left(\Delta_{\Sigma}\right) \ll 1$ and $-6 \equiv R<0$. Then $P=(-\Delta)(-\Delta+(R / 6))=\Delta^{2}+\Delta$, which gives $\lambda_{1}(P)=\lambda_{1}^{2}\left(\Delta_{\Sigma}\right)-\lambda_{1}\left(\Delta_{\Sigma}\right)<$ 0.

Before proving Theorem 6.7 we need to derive a few auxiliary results.
Lemma 6.8 Suppose that $Y\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)>0$, and assume that (6.18) holds with $\alpha \leq$ $0,0 \leq \beta \leq 4, \lambda \leq 0$, then $R:=R_{g_{w_{d}}}>0$.
Proof. We are going to show that under these assumptions we actually obtain (in terms of $g=g_{w_{d}}=e^{2 w_{d}} g_{0}$ )

$$
\begin{equation*}
L R \geq 0 \tag{6.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $L=L_{g_{w_{d}}}$ is the conformal Laplacian on $\left(M^{4}, g_{w_{d}}\right)$ as discussed in Example 2 of Chapter 4. To see that (6.19) holds, recall that for $\psi \in C^{2}(M)$,

$$
L \psi=-\Delta \psi+\frac{R}{6} \psi
$$

so if $\beta \in[0,4]$, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
L R & =-\Delta R+\frac{R^{2}}{6} \\
& =-\lambda-\alpha|W|^{2}-\beta\left(\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{12} R^{2}-|E|^{2}\right)\right)+\frac{R^{2}}{6} \\
& \geq 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now Lemma 6.8 follows from (6.19) and the following general result.

Lemma 6.9 If on $\left(M^{n}, g\right)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
L R=-\Delta R+c_{n} R^{2} \geq 0 \tag{6.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

(all in terms of the metric $g$ ), $c_{n}=\frac{n-2}{4(n-1)}$, then $Y\left(M^{n}, g\right)>0$ implies $R=R_{g}>0$ on $M^{n}$.

Proof. Let $\mu_{1}$ be the first eigenvalue of $L$ and $\varphi$ the first eigenfunction, $\varphi>0$. Then we know from Theorem 5.5 (i), that $Y\left(M^{n}, g\right)>0 \Leftrightarrow \mu_{1}>0$. Defining $f:=R / \varphi$ we compute (in terms of $g$ )

$$
\begin{aligned}
c_{n} R^{2} & \underset{(6.20)}{\geq} \Delta R=\Delta(f \varphi) \\
& =f \Delta \varphi+\varphi \Delta f+2\langle\nabla f, \nabla \varphi\rangle \\
& =f\left(c_{n} R-\mu_{1}\right) \varphi+\varphi \Delta f+2\langle\nabla f, \nabla \varphi\rangle \\
& =c_{n} R^{2}-R \mu_{1}+\varphi \Delta f+2\langle\nabla f, \nabla \varphi\rangle
\end{aligned}
$$

i.e., $R \mu_{1} \geq \varphi \Delta f+2\langle\nabla f, \nabla \varphi\rangle$, or

$$
f \mu_{1}-\frac{2}{\varphi}\langle\nabla f, \nabla \varphi\rangle \geq \Delta f
$$

Since $\mu_{1}>0$, we can apply the minimum principle for $f$ to obtain $f \geq 0$, hence $R \geq 0$. If $f=0$ at some point, we would get $f \equiv 0$, i.e., $R \equiv 0$ by the strong maximum principle, contradicting $Y\left(M^{n}, g\right)>0$ (see Theorem 5.5), whence $R>0$.

Lemma 6.10 Let $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ be a smooth, compact closed 4 manifold. Then $Y\left(M^{4}, g\right) \geq$ 0 implies $k_{g} \leq 8 \pi^{2}$ with equality iff $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ is conformally equivalent to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$.

## Remarks.

1. If $\gamma_{2}<0$ and $Y\left(M^{4}, g\right) \geq 0, \gamma_{1}>0$, then it follows from Lemma 6.10 that the assumptions of Theorem $6.5^{\prime}$ are automatically satisfied unless $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ is conformally equivalent to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, in which case the existence result is known anyway.
2. Gursky gave a proof of Lemma 6.10 in [54] without using the fact that $Y\left(M^{4}, g\right) \leq Y\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, which we have used in our proof below.

Proof of Lemma 6.10. Using (6.16) we may write (in terms of $g$ )

$$
k_{g}=\int_{M} Q d v=\int_{M} \frac{1}{4}\left(\frac{1}{12} R^{2}-|E|^{2}\right) d v \leq \frac{1}{48} \int_{M} R^{2} d v
$$

Since $k_{g}$ is conformally invariant we may assume that $g=g_{Y}$, the Yamabe metric, for which $R \equiv R_{g_{Y}} \equiv$ const. according to Theorem 5.5 (iii). Consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M} R^{2} d v & =R^{2} \operatorname{vol}(M, g) \\
& =\left(\int_{M} R d v\right)^{2} / \operatorname{vol}(M, g) \\
& =Y\left(M^{4}, g\right)^{2} \leq Y\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus we obtain

$$
k_{g} \leq \frac{1}{48} Y\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)^{2}=8 \pi^{2}
$$

with equality iff $Y\left(M^{4}, g\right)=Y\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, i.e., iff $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ is conformally equivalent to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$ by Theorem 5.5 (ii).

Lemma 6.11 Let $Y\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)>0$ and $k_{g_{0}} \geq 0$. Then there exists $w \in C^{\infty}(\Omega)$, such that in terms of $g:=g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta R=\lambda+2 \sigma_{2} \tag{6.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some $\lambda \leq 0$, where $R=R_{g_{w}}>0$.
Proof. Taking $\gamma_{1}=0, \gamma_{2}=6, \gamma_{3}=1$ in Theorem 6 we obtain $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ with

$$
\Delta R=\lambda+2 \sigma_{2}
$$

Notice that our assumption $Y\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)>0$ implies $k_{g_{0}} \leq 8 \pi^{2}$, and we may assume $k_{g_{0}}<8 \pi^{2}$, since otherwise $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ is conformally equivalent to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, on which (6.21) holds trivially with $\left|E_{g_{c}}\right|_{g_{c}}^{2} \equiv 0, R_{g_{c}}^{2} \equiv 144=-12 \lambda \Leftrightarrow \lambda=-12$. Note also that the assumption $k_{g_{0}} \geq 0$ implies $\lambda \leq 0$ by definition of $\lambda$ in (6.18). Since $\beta=2$ here, we can apply Lemma 6.8 to obtain $R>0$.

Proof of Theorem 6.7. By Lemma 6.11 there is a metric $g=e^{2 w} g_{0}$, such that (in terms of $g$ )

$$
\begin{align*}
\Delta R & =\lambda+2 \sigma_{2} \\
& =\lambda-|E|^{2}+\frac{1}{12} R^{2} \tag{6.22}
\end{align*}
$$

with $\lambda \leq 0$ and $R>0$. We can write (again in terms of $g$ ), for $\varphi \in C^{2}(M)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\langle P \varphi, \varphi\rangle_{L^{2}(d v)} & =\int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v+\frac{2}{3} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v-2 \int_{M} \operatorname{Ric}(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \\
& =\int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v+\frac{1}{6} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v-2 \int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

## Claim.

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \leq \int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v+\frac{1}{48} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v \tag{6.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Before proving the claim notice that then

$$
\langle P \varphi, \varphi\rangle_{L^{2}(d v)} \geq \frac{7}{48} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v
$$

which proves Theorem 6.7.
It remains to show (6.23). The following general fact (see [85], p.234) is useful:

Lemma 6.12 Let $M=\left(m_{i j}\right)$ be an $(n \times n)$-matrix with vanishing trace and norm

$$
|M|^{2}:=\left(\sum_{i, j=1}^{n} m_{i j}^{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{v \in S^{n-1}}|M v|^{2} \leq \frac{n-1}{n}|M|^{2} \tag{6.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

To prove (6.23) we take $n=4$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{align*}
& 2 \int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \underset{(6.24)}{\leq} 2 \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} \int_{M}|E||\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v \\
& \quad \leq 2 \int_{M} \frac{|E|^{2}}{R}|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v+\frac{3}{8} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v  \tag{6.25}\\
& \quad=2 \int_{M} \frac{|\nabla \varphi|^{2}}{R}(-\Delta R+\lambda) d v+\frac{13}{24} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v \\
& \quad \leq-2 \int_{M}|\nabla \varphi|^{2}\left(\frac{\Delta R}{R}\right) d v+\frac{13}{24} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v
\end{align*}
$$

where we used $\lambda \leq 0, R>0$. To estimate the first term we integrate by parts:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M}|\nabla \varphi|^{2}\left(\frac{\Delta R}{R}\right) d v & =-\int_{M}|\nabla \varphi|^{2} \nabla\left(\frac{1}{R}\right) \nabla R d v-\int_{M} \nabla\left(|\nabla \varphi|^{2}\right) \frac{\nabla R}{R} d v \\
& \geq \int_{M} \frac{|\nabla \varphi|^{2}|\nabla R|^{2}}{R^{2}} d v-2 \int_{M} \frac{|\nabla R|}{R}|\nabla \varphi|\left|\nabla^{2} \varphi\right| d v \\
& \geq-\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} \varphi\right|^{2} d v
\end{aligned}
$$

Inserting this into (6.25) we arrive at

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \leq 2 \int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} \varphi\right|^{2} d v+\frac{13}{24} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v \tag{6.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now apply Bochner's formula to get

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} \varphi\right|^{2} d v & =\int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v-\int_{M} \operatorname{Ric}(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \\
& =\int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v-\int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v-\frac{1}{4} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v \tag{6.27}
\end{align*}
$$

Substituting (6.27) into (6.26) leads to

$$
2 \int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \leq 2 \int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v-2 \int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v+\frac{1}{24} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v
$$

which implies

$$
2 \int_{M} E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \leq \int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v+\frac{1}{48} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v .
$$

For our investigations in Chapters 7 and 8 recall the functional

$$
F_{A}[w]=\gamma_{1} \mathrm{I}[w]+\gamma_{2} \mathrm{II}[w]+\gamma_{3} \mathrm{III}[w]
$$

as given in Theorem 5.4. The critical points of $F_{A}[\cdot]$ satisfy (6.17), i.e. in terms of the corresponding metric $g:=g_{w_{d}}=e^{2 w_{d}} g_{0}$,

$$
-\left(\frac{1}{12} \gamma_{2}+\gamma_{3}\right) \Delta R=-\gamma_{1}|W|^{2}-\frac{1}{2} \gamma_{2} \sigma_{2}+\frac{k_{d}}{\operatorname{vol}(M, g)},
$$

where $k_{d}:=\gamma_{1} \int_{M}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}+\gamma_{2} \int_{M} Q_{0} d v_{0}$.
If one chooses $\gamma_{2}=1, \gamma_{3}=\frac{1}{24}(3 \delta-2), \delta>0$, and finally $\gamma_{1}$, such that $k_{d}=0$, then the Euler-Lagrange equations for the functional

$$
F^{\delta}[w]:=\gamma_{1} \mathrm{I}[w]+\mathrm{II}[w]+\frac{1}{24}(3 \delta-2) \mathrm{II}[w]
$$

read as (in terms of $g$ )

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta \Delta R=8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+4 \sigma_{2}, \tag{*}
\end{equation*}
$$

or equivalently, (for $\sigma_{2}=\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)$ as in Chapter 7)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)=\frac{\delta}{4} \Delta R-2 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2} . \tag{*}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that if $\int_{M} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right) d v \geq 0$, then $\gamma_{1} \leq 0$ (since $k_{d}=0$ ), and $\gamma_{2}=1$, $\gamma_{3}>0$, if $\delta>\frac{2}{3}$, thus $\gamma_{2} \gamma_{3}>0$; while $\gamma_{1} \leq 0$ implies that $\alpha \leq 0$ in (6.18), thus we may apply Theorem 6.7 , or more precisely Lemma 6.8 to the solution of the equation $(*)_{\delta}$. Also the equations $(*)_{\delta},(*)_{\delta}^{\prime}$ may be viewed as a $\delta$-regularization of the equation

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)=-2 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2} \geq 0
$$

for $\gamma_{1} \leq 0$. That is, a regularization (depending on the parameter $\delta$ ) of an equation prescribing $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)$. The strategy later will be to let $\delta$ tend to zero.

Using the expressions for $\mathrm{I}[w], \mathrm{II}[w], \mathrm{III}[w]$, given in Theorem 5.4 together with (5.10) and (4.9) one can expand $F^{\delta}[w]$ in terms of derivatives of $w$ with respect to the background metric $g_{0}$ :

$$
\begin{align*}
F^{\delta}[w]=F_{0}^{\delta}[w]: & =\int_{M}\left(3 \delta\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2}+3(3 \delta-2) \Delta_{0} w\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{2}\right) d v_{0} \\
& +\int_{M} 2(3 \delta-2)\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{4} d v_{0} \tag{6.28}
\end{align*}
$$

+ lower order terms.

Lemma 6.13 Let $\mathcal{L}^{\delta}$ denote the linearization of $(*)_{\delta}$, i.e., the bilinearization of $F^{\delta}[\cdot]$ at a critical $w \in W^{2,2}(M)$ with metric $g=g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}, R_{g}>0$. Then, in terms of $g,\left(d v=d v_{g}\right)$

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\left\langle\varphi, \mathcal{L}^{\delta} \varphi\right\rangle_{L^{2}(d v)}:=\left.\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}\right|_{t=0} F^{\delta}[w+t \varphi]  \tag{6.29}\\
=\int_{M}\left(3 \delta(\Delta \varphi)^{2}-4 E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi)+(1-\delta) R|\nabla \varphi|^{2}\right) d v
\end{array}
$$

Proof. To simplify the computation, notice that the functional $F^{\delta}[\cdot]$ can be written as

$$
F^{\delta}[w+t \varphi]=F^{\delta}[w]+F_{w}^{\delta}[t \varphi]
$$

where $F_{w}^{\delta}[\cdot]$ is given by $(6.28)$ with the background metric $g_{0}$ replaced by $g=g_{w}=$ $e^{2 w} g_{0}$. This implies that

$$
\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}{ }_{\mid t=0} F^{\delta}[w+t \varphi]=\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}{ }_{\left.\right|_{t=0}} F_{w}^{\delta}[t \varphi]
$$

Without loss of generality we may normalize the volume

$$
f_{M} e^{4 w} d v_{0}=f_{M} d v=1
$$

to obtain by a straight forward computation (in terms of $g$ )

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left.\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}\right|_{t=0} F_{w}^{\delta}[t \varphi]= & 16 k_{d}\left(f_{M} \varphi^{2} d v-\left(f_{M} \varphi d v\right)^{2}\right)+2 \gamma_{2}\langle P \varphi, \varphi\rangle_{L^{2}(d v)} \\
& +24 \gamma_{3}\left(\int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v-\frac{1}{3} \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

Under our hypotheses that $k_{d}=0$ (by choice of $\gamma_{1} \leq 0$ ), $\gamma_{2}=1, \gamma_{3}=\frac{1}{24}(3 \delta-2)$, we get

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left.\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}\right|_{t=0} F_{w}^{\delta}[t \varphi]= & 2\left(\gamma_{2}+12 \gamma_{3}\right) \int_{M}(\Delta \varphi)^{2} d v+\frac{4}{3}\left(\gamma_{2}-6 \gamma_{3}\right) \int_{M} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v \\
& -4 \gamma_{2} \int_{M} \operatorname{Ric}(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi) d v \\
= & \int_{M}\left(3 \delta(\Delta \varphi)^{2}-4 E(\nabla \varphi, \nabla \varphi)+(1-\delta) R|\nabla \varphi|^{2}\right) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

We conclude this section with an estimate for the operator $\mathcal{L}^{\delta}$.

Proposition 6.14 Let $\mathcal{L}^{\delta}$ be as in the previous Lemma, then, at a solution $w$ with $R=R_{g_{w}}>0$, one has for all $\varphi \in W^{2,2}(M)$,

$$
\left\langle\varphi, \mathcal{L}^{\delta} \varphi\right\rangle_{L^{2}(d v)} \geq \frac{3}{4} \int_{M}\left(\delta^{2}(\Delta \varphi)^{2}+\frac{\delta}{16} R|\nabla \varphi|^{2}\right) d v
$$

In particular, $\mathcal{L}^{\delta} \geq 0$ and $\operatorname{ker} \mathcal{L}^{\delta}=\mathbb{R}$ for all $\delta \geq 0$.
The proof is similar to the one of Theorem 6.7, in particular like the proof of (6.23), recovering Gursky's result " $P \geq 0$ " for $\delta=2 / 3$.

In Chapter 8 we will use a continuity method to let $\delta \rightarrow 0$ in $(*)_{\delta}$. Proposition 6.14 will serve us to prove the openness for the continuity argument.

## § 7 Elementary symmetric functions

On $\left(M^{n}, g\right)$ denote $A:=\operatorname{Ric}-\frac{R}{2(n-1)} g$, the conformal Ricci tensor, compare with Example 4 of Chapter 4. Then the full Riemannian curvature tensor Riem decomposes as

$$
\operatorname{Riem}=W+\frac{1}{n-2} A \oslash g
$$

where $₫$ denotes the Kulkarni-Normizu product. Let $h, k$ be two covectors and $x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, x_{4}$ vectors, then

$$
\begin{aligned}
(h ® k)\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}, x_{4}\right): & =h\left(x_{1}, x_{3}\right) k\left(x_{2}, x_{4}\right)+h\left(x_{2}, x_{4}\right) k\left(x_{1}, x_{3}\right)-h\left(x_{1}, x_{4}\right) k\left(x_{2}, x_{3}\right) \\
& -h\left(x_{2}, x_{3}\right) k\left(x_{1}, x_{4}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

The conformal Ricci tensor $A$ is natural in conformal geometry. In his thesis J. Viaclovsky [90] considered the functional

$$
\mathcal{F}_{k}(g):=\int_{M} \sigma_{k}\left(A_{g}\right) d v_{g}
$$

where $\sigma_{k}(A)$ is the $k$-th elementary symmetric function of the eigenvalues of the tensor $A$, e.g., if $A$ is the conformal Ricci tensor,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& k=1: \quad \sigma_{1}(A)=\operatorname{Tr} A=R-\frac{R n}{2(n-1)}=\frac{n-2}{2(n-1)} R \\
& k=2: \quad \sigma_{2}(A)=\sum_{i<j} \lambda_{i} \lambda_{j}=\frac{1}{2}\left[(\operatorname{Tr} A)^{2}-|A|^{2}\right] \\
& \vdots \\
& k=n: \quad \sigma_{n}(A)=\operatorname{det} A .
\end{aligned}
$$

Theorem 7.1 [90] If $k \neq \frac{n}{2}$ and if $M$ is locally conformally flat, then

$$
\sigma_{k}\left(A_{g}\right) \equiv \text { const. }
$$

for all metrics $g \in\left[g_{0}\right]$ that are critical for $\mathcal{F}_{k}[\cdot]$.

In this section, we are going to study $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)$ on $M^{4}$. We remark that some of the algebraic properites of $\sigma_{2}$ on $M^{4}$ listed below have analogous for $\sigma_{k}$ on $M^{n}$, see [48].

Denote

$$
\begin{align*}
A_{i j} & =R_{i j}-\frac{R}{2(n-1)} g_{i j}=R_{i j}-\frac{R}{6} g_{i j}, \\
S_{i j} & =-E_{i j}+\frac{R}{4} g_{i j}=-R_{i j}+\frac{R}{2} g_{i j},  \tag{7.1}\\
\sigma_{2} & =\sigma_{2}(A)=\frac{1}{2}\left(\frac{1}{12} R^{2}-|E|^{2}\right),
\end{align*}
$$

and recall that $R_{i j}=E_{i j}+\frac{R}{4} g_{i j}$.
Lemma 7.2 (a) $R^{2} \geq 24 \sigma_{2}(A)$ with equality iff $E=0$. In particular, if $\sigma_{2}(A)>0$, then either $R>0$ or $R<0$ on $M^{4}$.
(b) Let $S^{i j}:=g^{i k} g^{j l} S_{k l}, g:=e^{2 w} g_{0}$, then

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)=\frac{1}{2} S^{i j} A_{i j}=\frac{1}{2}\langle S, A\rangle_{g}
$$

(c) If $R>0$ at $p \in M$, then for all $x \in T_{p} M$ and $S=S_{i j}$ one obtains

$$
\begin{aligned}
S(x, x) & \geq \frac{3 \sigma_{2}(A)}{R} g(x, x) \\
\operatorname{Ric}(x, x) & \geq \frac{3 \sigma_{2}(A)}{R} g(x, x)
\end{aligned}
$$

## Proof.

(a) is immediate.
(b) Recall that the inner product of two 2-tensors $h, k$ in the metric $g$ is given by

$$
\begin{aligned}
\langle h, k\rangle_{g} & =g^{i \alpha} g^{j \beta} h_{i j} k_{\alpha \beta} \\
S^{i j} A_{i j} & =\left(-E^{i j}+\frac{R}{4} g^{i j}\right)\left(E_{i j}+\frac{R}{12} g_{i j}\right) \\
& =-|E|^{2}+\frac{R^{2}}{48} \cdot 4=\frac{R^{2}}{12}-|E|^{2} \\
& =2 \sigma_{2}(A)
\end{aligned}
$$

where we have used the property that $\operatorname{Tr} E=E^{i j} g_{i j}=0$.
(c) Using Lemma 6.12 we estimate

$$
|E(x, x)| \leq \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}|E||x|_{g}^{2} \forall x \in T_{p} M
$$

Hence

$$
\begin{aligned}
S(x, x) & =-E(x, x)+\frac{R}{4}|x|_{g}^{2} \\
& \geq\left(-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}|E|+\frac{R}{4}\right)|x|_{g}^{2} \\
& \geq\left(-\frac{\sqrt{3}}{4}\left(c \frac{|E|^{2}}{R}+\frac{R}{c}\right)+\frac{R}{4}\right)|x|_{g}^{2} \\
& =\left(-\frac{3}{2} \frac{|E|^{2}}{R}+\frac{1}{8} R\right)|x|_{g}^{2}=\frac{3 \sigma_{2}(A)}{R}|x|_{g}^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

if we choose $c:=2 \sqrt{3}$.
Similarly,

$$
\operatorname{Ric}(x, x)=E(x, x)+\frac{R}{4} g(x, x) \geq \frac{3 \sigma_{2}}{R}|x|_{g}^{2}=\frac{3 \sigma_{2}(A)}{R} g(x, x)
$$

Corollary 7.3 (Corollary of (b) and (c) in Lemma 7.2) If $\sigma_{2}=\sigma_{2}(A)>$ $0, R>0$, then

$$
\frac{R}{2} g_{i j} \underset{(b)}{\geq} R_{i j} \underset{(c)}{\geq} \frac{3 \sigma_{2}}{R} g_{i j}
$$

In particular, Ric is positive definite $\left(R=c \sigma_{1}(A)\right)$.
We now list some basic facts concerning the tensors $S, A$, and $\sigma_{2}$ etc. under conformal change of metrics. Let $g=g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$, where $g_{0}$ is the background metric. Then

$$
\begin{equation*}
R=R_{g}=e^{-2 w}\left(R_{0}-6 \Delta_{0} w-6\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right) \tag{7.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice the change of signs when using the $g$-metric instead of $g_{0}$. In fact,

$$
\begin{align*}
R_{0} & =e^{2 w}\left(R+6 \Delta w-6|\nabla w|^{2}\right) \\
\Rightarrow R & =e^{-2 w} R_{0}-6 \Delta w+6|\nabla w|^{2} \tag{7.3}
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Ric}=\operatorname{Ric}_{0}-2 \nabla_{0}^{2} w-\left(\Delta_{0} w\right) g_{0}+2 d w \otimes_{0} d w-2\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} g_{0} \tag{7.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

or in terms of $g$ on the right-hand side:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Ric}=\operatorname{Ric}_{0}-2 \nabla^{2} w-(\Delta w) g-2 d w \otimes d w+2|\nabla w|^{2} g \tag{7.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Analogously,

$$
\begin{gather*}
A=A_{0}-2 \nabla_{0}^{2} w+2 d w \otimes_{0} d w-\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} g_{0}  \tag{7.6}\\
A=A_{0}-2 \nabla^{2} w-2 d w \otimes d w+|\nabla w|^{2} g  \tag{7.7}\\
S=S_{0}+2 \nabla_{0}^{2} w-2\left(\Delta_{0} w\right) g_{0}-2 d w \otimes_{0} d w-\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} g_{0}  \tag{7.8}\\
S=S_{0}+2 \nabla^{2} w-2(\Delta w) g+2 d w \otimes d w+|\nabla w|^{2} g \tag{7.9}
\end{gather*}
$$

The behavior of $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)$ under conformal change is determined by ( $A=A_{g}$ for $g=e^{2 w} g_{0}$ )

$$
\begin{align*}
\sigma_{2}(A) e^{4 w}= & \sigma_{2}\left(A_{0}\right)+2\left[\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2}-\left|\nabla_{0}^{2} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\left\langle\nabla_{0} w, \nabla_{0}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right)\right\rangle_{0}+\Delta_{0} w\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right]  \tag{7.10}\\
& -2(\operatorname{Ric})_{0}\left(\nabla_{0} w, \nabla_{0} w\right)-2\left\langle S_{0}, \nabla_{0}^{2} w\right\rangle_{0}
\end{align*}
$$

The last two terms are frequently denoted as lower order terms. Notice that for $u \in C^{\infty}(M)$, one has

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(\nabla_{0}^{2} u\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left[\left(\Delta_{0} u\right)^{2}-\left|\nabla_{0}^{2} u\right|_{0}^{2}\right]
$$

which resembles the first two terms on the right-hand side of $(7.10) . \sigma_{2}\left(\nabla_{0}^{2} u\right)$ is a typical example of a fully non-linear differential expression studied by Caffarelli, Nirenberg and Spruck [17] [18].

A fully non-linear differential equation of second order

$$
\mathcal{F}\left(\nabla^{2} u(x), \nabla u(x), u(x), x\right)=0 \text { in } \Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n}
$$

is called elliptic, iff there are constants $0<\theta_{1} \leq \theta_{2}$, such that

$$
\theta_{1}|\xi|^{2} \leq\left(\frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial u_{i j}}\right) \xi_{i} \xi_{j} \leq \theta_{2}|\xi|^{2}
$$

for all $\xi \in \mathbb{R}^{n}$.
In case $\mathcal{F}\left(\nabla^{2} w, \nabla w, w, x\right)=\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)$, one gets

$$
\frac{\partial \mathcal{F}}{\partial w_{i j}}=-2 S^{i j}
$$

and if $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)>0$, then $(-\mathcal{F})$ is elliptic.
Lemma 7.4 (Divergence structure of $\left.\sigma_{2}\right)$ For $\sigma_{2}(A)=\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)$ one has
(a) $\quad \sigma_{2}(A) e^{4 w}=\sigma_{2}\left(A_{0}\right)-\nabla_{0}\left(M(w) \nabla_{0} w\right)$,
where

$$
\begin{equation*}
M(w):=2 S_{0}+2 \nabla_{0}^{2} w-2\left(\Delta_{0} w\right) g_{0}-2 \nabla_{0} w \otimes \nabla_{0} w \tag{7.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

(b) $\quad M(w)=S+S_{0}+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} g_{0}$,
(c)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla S=0 \tag{7.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular, for $M$ closed, compact,

$$
\int_{M} S \nabla^{2} f d v=-\int_{M}(\nabla S) \nabla f d v=0 \quad \forall f \in C^{2}(M)
$$

## Proof.

(a) follows from a straightforward computation from (7.10)
(b) follows from (7.8) and (7.11)
(c) follows from the first Bianchi identity

$$
S_{i j}=-R_{i j}+\frac{R}{2} g_{i j} \Rightarrow \nabla_{j} S_{i j}=-\nabla_{j} R_{i j}+\frac{1}{2} \nabla_{i} R=0
$$

The main theorem in [23] and [24] is
Theorem 7.5 On $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ closed, compact, suppose
(i) $Y\left(M, g_{0}\right)>0$,
(ii) $\int_{M} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{0}\right) d v_{0}>0$.

Then there is $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ with $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) \equiv c>0$.

Corollary 7.6 Under the assumption of Theorem 7.5 there is $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$, with

$$
R_{g_{w}}>0 \text { and }\left(R_{g_{w}} / 2\right)>(\text { Ric })_{g_{w}}>0
$$

Remark 7.7 The condition (ii) in Theorem 7.5 implies a topological constraint, which may be seen as follows. Assume that $M^{4}$ is orientable. According to the Chern-Gauss-Bonnet Theorem, one has

$$
\begin{equation*}
8 \pi^{2} \chi\left(M^{4}\right)=\frac{1}{4} \int_{M}|W|^{2} d v+\int_{M} \sigma_{2}(A) d v \tag{7.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

In addition, the Signature Formula reads as

$$
\begin{equation*}
12 \pi^{2} \tau\left(M^{4}\right)=\frac{1}{4}\left(\int_{M}\left[\left|W^{+}\right|^{2}-\left|W^{-}\right|^{2}\right]\right) d v \tag{7.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
W^{+} & =\text {self-dual part of } W \\
W^{-}: & =\text {anti-self-dual part of } W \\
\tau: & =\text { signature of } M^{4}(\text { a topological invariant })
\end{aligned}
$$

Adding (7.13) and (7.14) we arrive as

$$
4 \pi^{2}\left(2 \chi\left(M^{4}\right) \pm 3 \tau\left(M^{4}\right)\right)=\frac{1}{2} \int_{M}\left|W^{ \pm}\right|^{2} d v+\int_{M} \sigma_{2}(A) d v
$$

Thus (ii) in Theorem 7.5 implies the constraint

$$
\begin{equation*}
2 \chi\left(M^{4}\right) \pm 3 \tau\left(M^{4}\right)>0 \tag{7.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Examples. For simply connected 4-manifolds with positive scalar curvature, there is well-known work of Donaldson [40] see also [47] that up to homeomorphism type, the manifolds are

$$
k\left(\mathbb{C P}^{2}\right) \# l\left(\overline{\mathbb{C P}^{2}}\right) \text { or } k\left(S^{2} \times S^{2}\right)
$$

If we assume in addition that $\int \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right) d v_{g}>0$, then Condition (7.15) implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
0<k<4+5 l \tag{7.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\chi=k+l+2, \tau=k-l$, e.g. for $l=0, k<4$. We remark that for manifolds of this type Sha-Yang [83] have alreday shown the existence of a metric $\tilde{g}$ with $(\text { Ric })_{\tilde{g}}>0$.

Remark 7.8 To prove Theorem 7.5 we will proceed in two steps. First we deform the given background metric $g_{0}$ in the conformal class to some metric $g_{w}$ with $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f>0$ for some positive function $f$. Secondly, we will deform $f$ to be constant. To be more precise, we will first show

Theorem 7.9 Under the assumption of Theorem 7.5 there is $f \in C^{\infty}(M), f>0$ and $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ such that $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f>0$.

The second step will be the proof of
Theorem 7.10 Suppose there is $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$, such that
(i)' $R_{g_{w}}>0$
(ii)' $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f>0$ for some $f \in C^{\infty}(M)$.

If $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ is not conformally equivalent to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, then there exists a constant

$$
C_{1}=C_{1}\left(\|f\|_{C^{1}},\left(\min _{M} f(\cdot)\right)^{-1}, g\right)
$$

such that

$$
\|w\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C_{1}
$$

We have to exclude the case of conformal equivalence to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, since, for instance, on $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, if $e^{2 w} g_{c}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$, then one has in Euclidean coordinates,

$$
w_{\lambda}(x)=\log \frac{2 \lambda}{\lambda^{2}+\left|x-x_{0}\right|^{2}}
$$

and $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w_{\lambda}}}\right) \equiv 6$ for all $\lambda>0$, but

$$
\lim _{\lambda \rightarrow 0}\left\|w_{\lambda}\right\|_{L^{\infty}}=\infty
$$

Once Theorem 7.10 is shown we will be able to conclude that there is a constant $C_{2}=C_{2}\left(\|f\|_{C^{\infty}}, C_{1}\right)$ with $\|w\|_{C^{\infty}} \leq C_{2}$.

By means of degree theory we finally prove

Corollary 7.11 If $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ is a closed compact 4-manifold satisfying (i), (ii) of Theorem 7.5, then there is $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$, such that

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) \equiv 1
$$

We will prove Theorem 7.9 in Chapters 8 and 9; and Theorem 7.10 in Chapter 10.

## § 8 A priori estimates for the regularized equation $(*)_{\delta}$

In this chapter we will prove Theorem 7.9.
Theorem 8.1 [23] On $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ closed, compact, assume
(i) $Y\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)>0$,
(ii) $\int_{M} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{0}\right) d v_{0}>0$,
then there is $f \in C^{\infty}(M), f>0$, and $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$, such that

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f .
$$

Remark. Conditions (i) and (ii) are invariant under conformal change of the metric, so sometimes we will simply write $Y(M)$ or $\int_{M} \sigma_{2}(A) d v$ without specifying the metric.
Outline of the proof.
We will use a continuity method on the "regularized equation" (in terms of $g=$ $\left.e^{2 w} g_{0}\right)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta \Delta R=8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+4 \sigma_{2}(A) . \tag{*}
\end{equation*}
$$

As we take the formal limit $\delta \rightarrow 0$ we end up with

$$
f=-2 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2} .
$$

To make sure that $f$ thus found is positive, we first observe that under the assumption (ii) of Theorem 8.1, $\gamma_{1}<0$. Thus $f \geq 0$. later on we will modify $f$ to get $f>0$ at points where the norm of the Weyl tensor $|W|=0$.

There will be two main steps in the proof of Theorem 8.1
Step 1. For all $\delta>0$ there is $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ solving $(*)_{\delta}$ with $R=R_{g_{w}}>0$.
Step 2. We will show a-priori estimates for solutions of $(*)_{\delta}$ independent of $\delta$ as $\delta \rightarrow 0$.

Before setting up Step 1 notice that solving $(*)_{\delta}$ amounts to analytically solving

$$
-6 \delta \Delta^{2} w=8\left((\Delta w)^{2}-\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}+\ldots\right)-4 f .
$$

Step 1. Fix $\delta_{0}>0$, and consider the set
$\mathcal{S}:=\left\{\delta \in\left[\delta_{0}, 1\right]:(*)_{\delta}\right.$ admits a smooth solution $w$ with $\left.R_{g_{w}}>0\right\}$.
Lemma 8.2 Under the hypotheses (i), (ii) of Theorem 8.1, one finds $1 \in \mathcal{S}$, i.e. $\mathcal{S} \neq \emptyset$.

Proof. Apply Theorem 6 with the choice $\gamma_{2}=1, \gamma_{3}=\frac{1}{24}(3 \delta-2)=\frac{1}{24}$, and $\gamma_{1} \leq 0$, such that $k_{d}=0$, compare with Chapter 6.

We find a solution $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ with

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta R & =8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+4\left(\frac{1}{24} R^{2}-\frac{1}{2}|E|^{2}\right) \\
& =8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+\frac{1}{6} R^{2}-2|E|^{2} \\
& \leq \frac{1}{6} R^{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

all in terms of the metric $g=e^{2 w} g_{0}$.
The last inequality means $L R \geq 0$, which implies by Lemma 6.8 and hypothesis (ii) that $R>0$ hence $1 \in \mathcal{S}$.

Lemma 8.3 $\mathcal{S}$ is open.
Proof. If $\delta_{1} \in \mathcal{S}, g_{1}:=e^{2 w_{1}} g, R_{g_{1}}>0$, then we know from Proposition 6.14, that $\operatorname{ker} \mathcal{L}_{\delta_{1}}=\mathbb{R}$, where $\mathcal{L}_{\delta_{1}}$ is the linearization of $(*)_{\delta_{1}}$. According to [2] one finds for every $\delta$ sufficiently close to $\delta_{1}$ a smooth solution $w_{\delta} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ of $(*)_{\delta}$. Since $R_{g_{1}}>0$ we get $R_{g_{w}}>0$ for all $w$ sufficiently close to $w_{1}$ in the $C^{2, \alpha}$-norm, i.e. $R_{g_{w_{\delta}}}>0$ for all $\delta$ sufficiently close to $\delta_{1}$.

Lemma 8.4 $\mathcal{S}$ is closed.
Proof. Our aim is to show that for $\delta_{k} \in \mathcal{S}$ with $\delta_{k} \rightarrow \bar{\delta}$ with $\bar{\delta} \geq \delta_{0}>0$, we find that a subsequence of the $w_{\delta_{k}}$ converges to a solution $w_{\bar{\delta}}$ of $(*)_{\bar{\delta}}$ in $W^{2,2}\left(M^{4}\right)$. The result in [89] implies that $w_{\bar{\delta}} \in C^{\infty}(M)$. Thus Lemma 8.4 follows directly from the following a priori estimates, in particular from (8.2).

Proposition 8.5 Suppose $w$ with $g=g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$ solves $(*)_{\delta}$ with $R=R_{g_{w}}>0$. Assume that $\int_{M} w d v_{0}=0$, then there are constants $C_{0}, C_{1}$ depending only on the background metric $g_{0}$, such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
w \geq C_{0}  \tag{8.1}\\
\delta \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\frac{2}{3} \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} \leq C_{1} \tag{8.2}
\end{gather*}
$$

Moreover, for any $\alpha \in \mathbb{R}, p \geq 0$, there are constants $C_{2}(\alpha, g), C_{3}(p, g)$, such that

$$
\begin{gather*}
\int_{M} e^{\alpha w} d v_{0} \leq C_{2}  \tag{8.3}\\
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4}|w|^{p} d v_{0} \leq C_{p} \tag{8.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

62

Proof. To prove (8.1) recall

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}+\frac{1}{6} R_{g_{w}} e^{2 w}=\frac{1}{6} R_{0} \tag{8.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies, by $R_{g_{w}}>0$,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} \leq \frac{1}{6} R_{0} \tag{8.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

in particular,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{0} w \leq \frac{1}{6} R_{0} \tag{8.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Let $G(\cdot, \cdot)$ denote the Green's function of the operator $\Delta_{0}$ on $\left(M, g_{0}\right)$, then we may write according to Green's formula,

$$
-w(x)+\int_{M} w d v_{0}=\int_{M} G(x, y)\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)(y) d v_{0}(y)
$$

Since $M$ is compact and closed, we may add a constant to $G$ to get $G$ positive. Then, if $\int_{M} w d v_{0}=0$ as we assumed, we obtain

$$
w(x) \geq-\int_{M} G(x, y) \frac{R_{0}(y)}{6} d v_{0}(y)=: C_{0}
$$

To prove (8.2), we first integrate (8.6) over $M$ to obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0} \leq \frac{1}{6} \int_{M} R_{0} d v_{0}=: \tilde{C}_{1} \tag{8.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

hence, by Poincaré's inequality,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} w^{2} d v_{0} \leq \hat{C}_{1} \tag{8.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

since $\int_{M} w d v_{0}=0$. Now (8.2) follows from the weak form of the Euler-Lagrange equation $(*)_{\delta}$ in terms of analytic expressions in $w$. More precisely, for all $\varphi \in$ $W^{2,2}(M)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{M}( & \frac{2}{3} \delta \Delta_{0} w \Delta_{0} \varphi+\frac{1}{2}(3 \delta-2)\left[\Delta_{0} \varphi\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}+2 \Delta_{0} w\left\langle\nabla_{0} \varphi, \nabla_{0} w\right\rangle_{0}\right. \\
& \left.\left.+2\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\left\langle\nabla_{0} \varphi, \nabla_{0} w\right\rangle_{0}\right]\right) d v_{0}  \tag{8.10}\\
= & \int_{M}\left(-2 U_{0}^{\delta} \varphi+2 \operatorname{Ric}_{0}\left(\nabla_{0} \varphi, \nabla_{0} w\right)+\frac{1}{2}(\delta-2) R_{0}\left\langle\nabla_{0} \varphi, \nabla_{0} w\right\rangle\right) d v_{0}
\end{align*}
$$

where $U_{0}^{\delta}:=\gamma_{1}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}^{2}+\gamma_{2} Q_{0}-\gamma_{3} \Delta_{0} R_{0}, \gamma_{2}=1, \gamma_{3}=\frac{1}{24}(3 \delta-2)$, and $\gamma_{1} \leq 0$ appropriately chosen, so that $k_{d}=0$.

Notice that the right-hand side is of lower order and bounded according to (8.8) and (8.9). Testing with $\varphi:=w$ in (8.10) we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}\left(\frac{3}{2} \delta\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2}+\frac{3}{2}(3 \delta-2) \Delta_{0} w\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}+(3 \delta-2)\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4}\right) d v_{0} \leq C \tag{8.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some constant $C$. (We will repeatedly use the notation $C$ for generic constants, whose values might change from line to line in the following.)

Case 1. If $\delta \in\left[\frac{2}{3}, 1\right]$, i.e., $3 \delta-2 \in[0,1]$, we use $\frac{3}{2} x y \geq-\frac{9}{16} x^{2}-y^{2}$ to obtain from, (8.11) for $x:=\Delta_{0} w, y:=\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{M} \frac{3}{16}(6-\delta)\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}=\int_{M}\left(\frac{3}{2} \delta-\frac{9}{16}(3 \delta-2)\right)\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0} \\
& \quad \leq \int_{M}\left(\frac{3}{2} \delta\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2}+\frac{3}{2}(3 \delta-2) \Delta_{0} w\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}+(3 \delta-2)\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4}\right) d v_{0} \\
& \quad \leq C
\end{aligned}
$$

i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0} \leq C \tag{8.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice also that by (8.6),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} & \leq \frac{1}{6} \int_{M} R_{0}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0}-\int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0} \\
& \leq \frac{1}{6 \varepsilon} \int_{M} R_{0}^{2} d v_{0}+\frac{1}{\varepsilon} \int_{M}\left|\Delta_{0} w\right|^{2} d v_{0}+2 \varepsilon \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0}
\end{aligned}
$$

hence, by (8.12),

$$
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} \leq C
$$

which finishes the proof of (8.2) in Case 1.
Case 2. If $\delta \in\left(0, \frac{2}{3}\right)$, i.e., $(3 \delta-2) \in(-2,0)$, then by (8.6),

$$
\begin{gathered}
(3 \delta-2)\left[\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right]=(3 \delta-2)\left[\frac{3}{2}\left(\Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{2}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right] \\
\underset{(8.6)}{\geq} \frac{(3 \delta-2)}{6} \cdot \frac{3}{2} R_{0}+\frac{2-3 \delta}{2}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}
\end{gathered}
$$

Inserting this into (8.11) we obtain

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{3}{2} \delta \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\frac{1}{2} \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4}(2-3 \delta) d v_{0} \\
& \quad \leq \int_{M} \frac{3}{2} \delta\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\int_{M}\left((3 \delta-2)\left[\frac{3}{2} \Delta_{0} w+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}\right]\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2}+\frac{(2-3 \delta)}{6} \frac{3}{2} R_{0}\right) d v_{0} \\
& \quad \leq C
\end{aligned}
$$

i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{3}{2} \delta \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0}-\frac{3}{2} \delta \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} \leq C \tag{8.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, multiplying (8.11) by $\frac{3 \delta}{2}(2-3 \delta)^{-1}>0$ leads to the estimate

$$
\begin{aligned}
-\frac{3}{2} \delta \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} & \leq C+\frac{9 \delta}{4} \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{2} d v_{0} \\
& \leq C+\frac{9 \delta}{4}\left[\frac{1}{2} \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\frac{1}{2} \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

Substituting this into (8.13) we get

$$
\frac{3}{8} \delta \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\left(1-\frac{9}{8} \delta\right) \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} \leq C
$$

or

$$
\delta \int_{M}\left(\Delta_{0} w\right)^{2} d v_{0}+\left(\frac{8}{3}-3 \delta\right) \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{4} d v_{0} \leq C
$$

which proves (8.2), since $\delta \in\left(0, \frac{2}{3}\right)$ in this case. (8.3) follows from Adam's inequality, Lemmas 6.1 and 6.2 in the same way as Corollary 1.7 was deduced from Corollary 1.6. Notice that (8.2) guarantees that the constant on the right-hand side of (8.3) does not depend on $w$.

Testing (8.10) with $\varphi:=w^{p}$ and integrating by parts leads to (8.4), for details, see [23].

With Lemma 8.4 we have established the existence of smooth solutions $w$ of $(*)_{\delta}$ with $R_{g_{w}}>0$ for all $\delta>0$. The following two results summarize the necessary a-priori estimates independent of $\delta$, as $\delta \rightarrow 0$.

Proposition 8.6 Under the assumptions of Theorem 8.1 there is a constant $C_{1}=$ $C_{1}(g)$ independent of $\delta$, such that for the solutions $w_{\delta} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ of $(*)_{\delta}$

$$
\left\|w_{\delta}\right\|_{W^{2,3}} \leq C_{1} \forall \delta>0
$$

Proposition 8.7 For all $s<5$ there is a constant $C_{2}=C_{2}(g, s)$ independent of $\delta$, such that

$$
\left\|w_{\delta}\right\|_{W^{2, s}} \leq C_{2} \forall \delta>0
$$

Before proving these a-priori estimates let us review some regularity theory for fully non-linear elliptic equations. The techniques used in [17], [18], [42], [60] motivate the approach we will present in these lectures.

The investigations in [17], [18] are concerned with the fully non-linear elliptic equations of the form

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
\mathcal{F}\left(\nabla^{2} u, \nabla u, u, x\right) & =\varphi(x) & \text { in } \Omega \subset \mathbb{R}^{n} \\
u(x) & =\psi(x) & \text { on } \partial \Omega
\end{array}\right.
$$

where $\mathcal{F}$ is assumed to be uniformly elliptic, see Chapter 7. In [17] the MongeAmpère equation $\left(\mathcal{F}=\operatorname{det}\left(u_{i j}\right)\right)$ is studied, whereas [18] includes the case $\mathcal{F}=$ $\sigma_{k}\left(u_{i j}\right)$. Omitting their results regarding boundary estimates, we will focus on interior estimates for $\mathcal{F}_{k}=\sigma_{k}\left(u_{i j}\right)$.

Definition $8.8 \Gamma_{k}^{+}:=\left\{A \in M(n \times n)\right.$ with $\sigma_{k}(A)>0$ and $A$ is in the same connected component as the identity $\}$.
$\Gamma_{k}^{+}$is a convex cone with the following properties.
Proposition 8.9 (i) $\Gamma_{k}^{+} \subseteq \Gamma_{k-1}^{+} \subseteq \ldots \subseteq \Gamma_{1}^{+}$,
(ii) For $\left(u_{i j}\right) \in \Gamma_{k}^{+}, \sigma_{k}^{\frac{1}{k}}\left(u_{i j}\right)$ is a concave function, i.e. for $A=\left(u_{i j}\right) \in \Gamma_{k}^{+}$and $B=\left(v_{i j}\right) \in \Gamma_{k}^{+}$one has $\sigma_{k}^{\frac{1}{k}}(t A+(1-t) B) \geq t \sigma_{k}^{\frac{1}{k}}(A)+(1-t) \sigma_{k}^{\frac{1}{k}}(B)$,
(iii) Let $\left(u_{i j}\right) \in \Gamma_{k}^{+}$with $\mathcal{F}_{k}\left(u_{i j}\right)=\sigma_{k}^{\frac{1}{k}}\left(u_{i j}\right)=\varphi$ for some given smooth function $\varphi$ with

$$
0<\inf _{\Omega} \varphi \leq \varphi \leq \sup _{\Omega} \varphi<\infty
$$

then $u \in C^{0}(\Omega) \Rightarrow u \in C^{1}(\Omega) \Rightarrow u \in C^{2}(\Omega) \Rightarrow u \in C^{2, \alpha}(\Omega) \Rightarrow u \in C^{\infty}(\Omega)$, with the interior estimates

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u\|_{C^{1}\left(B_{R}\right)} & \lesssim\|u\|_{C^{0}\left(B_{2 R}\right)}, \\
\|u\|_{C^{2}\left(B_{R}\right)} & \lesssim\|u\|_{C^{1}\left(B_{2 R}\right)}, \\
\|u\|_{C^{2, \alpha}\left(B_{R}\right)} & \lesssim\|u\|_{C^{2}\left(B_{2 R}\right)}, \\
\|u\|_{C^{\infty}\left(B_{R}\right)} & \lesssim\|u\|_{C^{2, \alpha}\left(B_{2 R}\right)},
\end{aligned}
$$

where $\lesssim$ denotes the inequality up to a constant factor depending on the data, in particular on $\varphi$.
(iv) $u \in C^{1,1}(\Omega) \Rightarrow u \in C^{2, \alpha}(\Omega)$ if $\mathcal{F}_{\|}$is uniformly elliptic and concave, see [42], [60].

To motivate our method to establish a-priori bounds in $W^{2,3}$, we will first establish an a-priori estimate for solutions $w$ of the equation $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f>0$ on $M^{4}$.

Theorem 8.10 Let $w \in C^{\infty}\left(M^{4}\right),\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ closed, compact, satisfy $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f$, for some $f>0$ on $M^{4}$, with $R_{g_{w}}>0$. Then

$$
\left\|\nabla_{0}^{2} w\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(g_{0}, \min _{M} f(\cdot),\|w\|_{L^{\infty}},\left\|\nabla_{0} w\right\|_{L^{\infty}}\|f\|_{C^{3}}\right)
$$

The outline of the proof of Theorem 8.10 is as follows. Recall from Lemma 7.2 that the linearization of $\sigma_{2}$ is essentially given by the tensor $S=\left(S_{i j}\right)$, for which we derive an identity involving the Bach tensor $B=\left(B_{i j}\right)$ in Lemma 8.11. To prepare a variant of Pogorelov's trick we analyze the expression $S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V$ for $V:=\frac{1}{2}|\nabla w|^{2}$ in Lemma 8.13, before we apply the maximum principle.

Lemma 8.11 Calculating in the metric $g_{w}=e^{-2 w} g$,

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R= & 3 \Delta \sigma_{2}(A)+3\left(|\nabla E|^{2}-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}\right) \\
& +6 \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}+R|E|^{2}  \tag{8.14}\\
& -6 W^{i j k l} E_{i k} E_{j l}-6 E^{i j} B_{i j}
\end{align*}
$$

where $B_{i j}$ denotes the Bach tensor, which is the first variation of $\int_{M}|W|^{2}$, given by

$$
B_{i j}=\nabla^{k} \nabla^{l} W_{k i j l}+\frac{1}{2} R^{k l} W_{k i j l}
$$

Notice that the only property relevant for us is the behavior of $B=\left(B_{i j}\right)$ under conformal change of the metric:

$$
B=B_{g_{w}}=e^{-2 w} B_{0}
$$

Proof of Lemma 8.11. Apply Bianchi indentity, by a formulation of Derdzinski [39] we have

$$
\begin{align*}
B_{i j}= & -\frac{1}{2} \Delta E_{i j}+\frac{1}{6} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R-\frac{1}{24} \Delta R g_{i j}  \tag{8.15}\\
& -E^{k l} W_{i k j l}+E_{i}^{k} E_{j k}-\frac{1}{4}|E|^{2} g_{i j}+\frac{1}{6} R E_{i j}
\end{align*}
$$

where $E_{i}^{k}:=g^{k \alpha} E_{\alpha i}$.
Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{1}{2} \Delta|E|^{2}= & |\nabla E|^{2}+E^{i j} \Delta E_{i j} \\
& =(8.15) \\
& |\nabla E|^{2}+\frac{1}{3} E^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R+2 \operatorname{Tr} E^{3} \\
& +\frac{1}{3} R|E|^{2}-2 W^{i k j l} E_{i j} E_{k l}-2 B^{i j} E_{i j}
\end{aligned}
$$

where we used the fact that $\operatorname{Tr} E=E^{i j} g_{i j}=0$.
Consequently,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\Delta \sigma_{2}(A)= & \Delta\left(-\frac{1}{2}|E|^{2}+\frac{1}{24} R^{2}\right) \\
= & -|\nabla E|^{2}+\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}+\frac{1}{12} R \Delta R-\frac{1}{3} E^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R \\
& -2 \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}-\frac{1}{3} R|E|^{2}+2 W^{i k j l} E_{i j} E_{k l}+3 B^{i j} E_{i j} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Note that $\frac{1}{12} R \Delta R-\frac{1}{3} E^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R=\frac{1}{3} S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R$, by definition of $S=\left(S_{i j}\right)$, see Chapter 7, which proves (8.14).

We now begin the proof of Theorem 8.1
Notice that for $\sigma_{2}=\sigma_{2}(A)=f>0$ with $R>0$ we can argue as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nabla \sigma_{2} & =\frac{1}{12} R \nabla R-|E| \nabla(|E|), \quad \text { i.e., } \\
\left\langle-\nabla \sigma_{2}, \frac{\nabla R}{R}\right\rangle & =-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}+\frac{|E|}{R}\langle\nabla| E|, \nabla R\rangle \\
& \leq \frac{1}{2} \frac{|E|^{2}}{R^{2}}|\nabla R|^{2}+\frac{1}{2}|\nabla(|E|)|^{2}-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2} \\
& \leq \frac{1}{2}|\nabla E|^{2}+\frac{|\nabla R|^{2}}{R^{2}}\left(\frac{1}{2}|E|^{2}-\frac{1}{24} R^{2}+\frac{1}{24} R^{2}\right)-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2} \\
& \leq \frac{1}{2}\left(|\nabla E|^{2}-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}\right)-\sigma_{2} \frac{|\nabla R|^{2}}{R^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

where we used Kato's inequality, $|\nabla(|E|)| \leq|\nabla E|$.
Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2}\left(|\nabla E|^{2}-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}\right) \geq \sigma_{2} \frac{|\nabla R|^{2}}{R^{2}}-\nabla \sigma_{2} \frac{\nabla R}{R} \tag{8.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

At a point $p \in M$ with $R(p)=\max _{M} R$ one has $\nabla R=0$ and $S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R \leq 0$, since $S_{i j}$ is positive definite according to Lemma 7.2 (c). Since $E$ is traceless,

$$
\begin{align*}
6 \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}+R|E|^{2} & \geq-\frac{6}{\sqrt{3}}|E|^{3}+R|E|^{2} \\
& \geq|E|^{2}(R-2 \sqrt{3}|E|) \\
& =|E|^{2} \frac{R^{2}-12|E|^{2}}{R+2 \sqrt{3}|E|}=|E|^{2} \frac{24 \sigma_{2}}{R+2 \sqrt{3}|E|}  \tag{8.17}\\
& \geq|E|^{2} \frac{12 \sigma_{2}}{R}>0
\end{align*}
$$

because $\sigma_{2}>0$ implies $\frac{1}{12} R^{2}>|E|^{2}$, i.e., $2 \sqrt{3}|E|<R$.

Furthermore,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|W E E| \leq e^{-2 w}\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}|E|^{2} \lesssim|E|^{2} \tag{8.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

under the assumptions that $\|w\|_{L^{\infty}}$ and $\left|W_{0}\right|_{0}$ are controlled.
Similarly,

$$
\begin{equation*}
|B E| \leq e^{-2 w}\left|B_{0}\right|_{0}|E| \lesssim|E| \tag{8.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where again $\lesssim$ denotes an inequality up to a multiplicative constant.
Combining (8.16) and (8.17) we obtain

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R \geq & 3 \Delta \sigma_{2}+6\left(\sigma_{2} \frac{|\nabla R|^{2}}{R^{2}}-\nabla \sigma_{2} \frac{\nabla R}{R}\right)  \tag{8.20}\\
& +|E|^{2} \frac{12 \sigma_{2}}{R}+W E E+B E
\end{align*}
$$

and at a maximum point $p \in M$ of $R(\cdot)$ we have

$$
0 \geq\left(S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R\right)(p) \geq 3 \Delta \sigma_{2}(p)+|E|^{2} \frac{12 \sigma_{2}}{R}(p)-C_{1}|E|^{2}(p)-C_{2}|E|(p)
$$

But it is not clear, if the right-hand side dominates some term like $c R^{2}-c R$. The estimate (8.20), however, is still useful to prove the following uniqueness result.

Corollary 8.12 ([90]) If $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) \equiv$ const. $=: c>0$, for the metric $g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{c}$ on $S^{4}$, then $R_{g_{w}} \equiv$ const., and $g_{w}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$ for some conformal transformation $\phi: S^{4} \rightarrow S^{4}$.

Proof. On $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$ one has $\left(W_{i j k l}\right)_{g_{w}} \equiv 0$ for $g_{w} \in\left[g_{c}\right]$, and therefore also $B_{g_{w}} \equiv 0$, and (8.20) simplifies to

$$
\begin{aligned}
S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R & \geq 6 c \frac{|\nabla R|^{2}}{R}+|E|^{2} \frac{12 c}{R} \\
& \geq 6 c \frac{|\nabla R|^{2}}{R}
\end{aligned}
$$

By (7.12) in Lemma 7.4, we obtain

$$
0=\int_{S^{4}} S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R d v_{g_{w}} \geq 6 c \int_{S^{4}} \frac{|\nabla R|^{2}}{R} d v_{g_{w}}
$$

i.e., $R=R_{g_{w}} \equiv$ const., which by Obata's Theorem implies $g_{w}=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$.

To make use of (8.20) for the proof of Theorem 8.10 we use Pogorelov's trick [76] applying the maximum principle to a function of the type $(\Delta w) e^{\varphi\left(|\nabla w|^{2}\right)}$ for some suitably chosen function $\varphi$.

Lemma 8.13 On $\left(M^{4}, g_{w}\right)$ let $V:=\frac{1}{2}\left|\nabla_{g_{w}} w\right|_{g_{w}}^{2}=: \frac{1}{2}|\nabla w|^{2}$.
Then, in terms of the metric $g_{w}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V= & -\frac{1}{4} \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}+\frac{1}{48} R|E|^{2}+\frac{1}{(24)^{2}} R^{3} \\
& -\frac{1}{2}\left\langle\nabla w, \nabla \sigma_{2}\right\rangle+\text { lower order terms }  \tag{8.21}\\
& \text { of } \operatorname{order}\left(|\nabla w|^{2}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2},\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2},|\nabla w|^{6}, \text { etc. }\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Proof. With respect to the metric $g_{w}$ we compute the covariant derivatives of $V$ first

$$
\begin{aligned}
\nabla_{j} V & =\nabla_{j}\left(\frac{1}{2}|\nabla w|^{2}\right)=\nabla_{j}\left(\nabla_{k} w \nabla_{k} w\right), \\
\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V & =\left(\nabla_{i} \nabla_{k} w\right)\left(\nabla_{j} \nabla_{k} w\right)+\left\langle\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} \nabla_{k} w\right) \nabla_{k} w, \\
\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} \nabla_{k} w & =\nabla_{i} \nabla_{k} \nabla_{j} w=\nabla_{k} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} w+R_{i k j}^{m} \nabla_{m} w .
\end{aligned}
$$

Recall (7.6),

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} w=-\frac{1}{2} A_{i j}+\frac{1}{2} A_{i j}^{0}-\nabla_{i} w \nabla_{j} w+\frac{1}{2}|\nabla w|^{2}\left(g_{w}\right)_{i j} \tag{8.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

So,

$$
\nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V=\nabla_{i} \nabla_{k} w \nabla_{j} \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{2} \nabla_{k} A_{i j} \nabla_{k} w+\text { l.o.t. of order }\left(\left|\nabla^{2} w\right| \cdot|\nabla w|^{2}\right)
$$

Thus
$S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V=S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{k} w \nabla_{j} \nabla_{k} w-\frac{1}{2} S^{i j} \nabla_{k} w\left(\nabla_{k} A_{i j}\right)+$ l.o.t.of order $\left(\left|\nabla^{2} w\right| \cdot|\nabla w|^{2}\right)$.
Notice that by (8.22) and (7.1)

$$
\begin{align*}
& S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{k} w \nabla_{j} \nabla_{k} w \underset{(8.22)}{=} \frac{1}{4} S^{i j} A_{i k} A_{j k} \\
&+ \text { l.o.t. of order }\left(\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2},|\nabla w|^{4}\right)  \tag{8.24}\\
&=-\frac{1}{4} \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}+\frac{R}{48}|E|^{2}+\frac{1}{576} R^{3} \\
&+ \text { l.o.t. of order }\left(\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2}|\nabla w|^{4}\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Moreover

$$
\begin{equation*}
S^{i j} \nabla_{k} w \nabla_{k} A_{i j}=\left\langle\nabla w, \nabla \sigma_{2}(A)\right\rangle \tag{8.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

since by (7.1),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\nabla_{k} A^{i j}\right) S^{i j} & =\left(\nabla_{k} E^{i j}+\frac{1}{12}\left(\nabla_{k} R\right) g^{i j}\right)\left(-E_{i j}+\frac{1}{4} R g_{i j}\right) \\
& =-E^{i j}\left(\nabla_{k} E_{i j}\right)+\frac{1}{12} R \nabla_{k} R \\
& =\nabla_{k}\left(-\frac{1}{2}|E|^{2}+\frac{1}{24} R^{2}\right) \\
& =\nabla_{k} \sigma_{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

Summarizing (8.23) - (8.25) completes the proof.
Proof of Theorem 8.10. We calculate in terms of the metric $g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$. First notice by $\sigma_{2}=\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f>0$, that $S \geq \frac{3 \sigma_{2}}{R}>0$ by Lemma 7.2 (c). In addition, for $|\nabla w| \leq c,|w| \leq c$, one gets

$$
\begin{aligned}
|E|^{2} & \leq 12 R^{2}+C(f), \text { i.e. } \\
\mid \text { Ric }\left.\right|^{2} & \lesssim R^{2}+C, \text { or in terms of } w, \\
\left|\nabla^{2} w\right| & \lesssim|\Delta w| \lesssim\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|
\end{aligned}
$$

We apply the maximum principle to the function $h:=R+24 \mathrm{~V}$. At a maximum point $p \in M$ of $h$ we have, by Lemmas 8.11 and 8.13,

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 \geq & S^{i j}(p) \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} h(p)=S^{i j}(p) \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R(p)+24 S^{i j}(p) \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V(p) \\
= & 3 \Delta \sigma_{2}(p)+3\left(|\nabla E|^{2}(p)-\frac{1}{2}|\nabla R|^{2}(p)\right) \\
& +\frac{3}{2} R(p)|E|^{2}(p)+\frac{1}{24} R^{3}(p) \\
& -12\left\langle\nabla w(p), \nabla \sigma_{2}(p)\right\rangle \\
& + \text { l.o.t. of order }\left(\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2}\right) .
\end{aligned}
$$

Now use (8.16) to estimate the term in brackets to get (by $|\nabla w| \leq c$ ),

$$
\begin{aligned}
0 \geq & S^{i j}(p) \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} h(p) \gtrsim \frac{1}{24} R^{3}(p)+\frac{3}{2} R(p)|E|^{2}(p) \\
& -c\left(\|f\|_{C^{2}}\right)-c\left(\|f\|_{C^{1}}\right)\left|\frac{\nabla R}{R}\right|(p)-c R^{2}-c
\end{aligned}
$$

At $p$ we have $\nabla h(p)=0$, thus

$$
|\nabla R|(p)=24|\nabla V|(p) \lesssim\left|\nabla^{2} w(p)\right||\nabla w(p)|
$$

and $\sigma_{2}(p) \geq \min _{M} f(\cdot)>0$, which implies

$$
R(p) \gtrsim\left(\min _{M} f(\cdot)\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}>0
$$

so

$$
\left|\frac{\nabla R}{R}\right|(p) \lesssim\left|\nabla^{2} w(p)\right||\nabla w(p)| \lesssim\left|\nabla^{2} w(p)\right|
$$

Consequently, there exist constants $c_{1}, c_{2}, c_{3}$ depending on $(f,|\nabla w|,|w|)$, such that

$$
0 \geq S^{i j}(p) \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} h(p)>c_{1} h^{3}(p)-c_{2} h^{2}(p)-c_{3}
$$

Thus $h$ is bounded, hence $\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|$ is bounded.
We now return to the a-priori estimate of solution of equation $(*)_{\delta}$. The main point is to modify the proof of Theorem 8.10 by applying an integral form of Pogorelov estimate.

Proposition 8.14 There is $\delta_{0} \geq 0$, and $C=C(g)$, such that for all $\delta \leq \delta_{0}, w \in$ $C^{\infty}(M)$ solving $(*)_{\delta}$ with $R_{g_{w}}>0$ and $\int_{M} \sigma\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) d g_{w}>0$, the following estimate holds

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0}^{2} w\right|_{0}^{3} d v_{0}+\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|_{0}^{12} d v_{0} \leq C \tag{8.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

In particular, there is $\alpha>0$, such that

$$
\|w\|_{C^{\alpha}} \leq C(g)
$$

The crucial step of the proof is in the following Lemma:
Lemma 8.15 (Main Lemma) There are constants $\delta_{0} \geq 0, C=C\left(g_{0}\right)$, such that in terms of $g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$,

$$
\begin{align*}
& \frac{\delta}{16} \int_{M} \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R} d v+\int_{M}\left(\frac{R}{6}\right)^{3} d v  \tag{8.27}\\
& \quad \leq(1+c \delta) \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+c \int_{M} R^{2} d v+c
\end{align*}
$$

Instead of the pointwise maximum principle as in the proof of Theorem 8.10 we use integral estimates. Denote

$$
\begin{aligned}
I & =\int_{M} S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R d v \\
I I: & =\int_{M} S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} V d v
\end{aligned}
$$

for $V:=\frac{1}{2}|\nabla w|^{2}$, where here and in the following, $d v=d v_{g_{w}}$ and all covariant derivatives are taken with respect to the metric $g_{w}$ unless otherwise noted.

We remark that due to the fact that $\nabla_{i} S_{i j}=0$, we have both $I=I I \equiv 0$.
We also remark that in contrast to the proof of Theorem 8.10 we now only have $|\nabla w| \in L^{4}(M)$ and $w \geq c$ for $w$ satisfies $(*)_{\delta}$.

Lemma 8.16 There is a constant $C=C\left(g_{0}\right)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{I} \geq \int_{M}\left(\frac{3}{2} \delta \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R}+6 \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}+\frac{1}{12} R^{3}-C R^{2}-C\right) d v \tag{8.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

for any $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ solving $(*)_{\delta}$.

Lemma 8.17 There is a constant $C=C\left(g_{0}\right)$, such that

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{II} \geq & \int_{M}\left(-\frac{1}{4} \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}+\frac{1}{288} R^{3}-\frac{1}{4} R|\nabla w|^{4}\right.  \tag{8.29}\\
& \left.-C \delta R^{3}-C \delta|\nabla w|^{6}-C R^{2}-C\right) d v
\end{align*}
$$

for all $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$ solving $(*)_{\delta}$.

Assuming (8.28), (8.29) for a moment, we will finish the proof of (8.27) in Lemma 8.15. In fact

$$
\begin{aligned}
0= & \mathrm{I}+24 \mathrm{II} \geq \frac{3}{2} \delta \int_{M} \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R} d v+\frac{1}{6} \int_{M} R^{3} d v \\
& -6 \int_{M} R|\nabla w|^{4} d v-\int_{M}\left(C \delta R^{3}+C \delta|\nabla w|^{6}+C R^{2}+C\right) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

Divide by 36 and apply Hölder's and Young's inequality to get

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \frac{\delta}{24} \int_{M} \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R} d v+\int_{M}\left(\frac{R}{6}\right)^{3} d v \leq \int_{M}\left(\frac{R}{6}\right)|\nabla w|^{4} d v \\
& \quad+\frac{C \delta}{36} \int_{M} R^{3} d v+\frac{C \delta}{36} \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+\frac{C}{36} \int_{M}\left(R^{2}+1\right) d v \\
& \leq \\
& \leq\left(\int_{M}\left(\frac{R}{6}\right)^{3} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{3}}\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v\right)^{\frac{2}{3}}+\ldots \\
& \quad \leq \frac{1}{3} \int_{M}\left(\frac{R}{6}\right)^{3} d v+\frac{2}{3} \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+\ldots
\end{aligned}
$$

where the dots denote the remaining terms on the right-hand side. Absorbing the first term on the right into the left-hand side finishes the proof of Lemma 8.15.

Proof of (8.28): Integrate (8.14) in Lemma 8.11 and use (8.18), (8.19) to get (in terms of the metric $g_{w}$ )

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{I}= & 3 \int_{M}\left(\left(|\nabla E|^{2}-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}\right)+6 \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}\right. \\
& \left.+R|E|^{2}-6 W E E-6 B E\right) d v  \tag{8.30}\\
\geq & 3 \int_{M}\left(|\nabla E|^{2}-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}\right) d v+\int_{M} 6 \operatorname{Tr} E^{3} d v \\
& +\int_{M}\left(C R^{2}+C\right) d v+\int_{M} R|E|^{2} d v
\end{align*}
$$

where we have used that $0<\int_{M} \sigma_{2} d v=\frac{1}{2} \int_{M}\left(\frac{R^{2}}{12}-|E|^{2}\right) d v$, whence $\int_{M}|E|^{2} d v \lesssim$ $\int_{M} R^{2} d v$.

To estimate $\int_{M} R|E|^{2} d v$ from below, recall $(*)_{\delta}$

$$
\delta \Delta R=4 \sigma_{2}+8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}
$$

where $\gamma_{1}<0$, since $\int_{M} \sigma_{2} d v>0$, compare to Chapter 6 .
Multiplication of $(*)_{\delta}$ by $R$ and integration leads to

$$
\begin{align*}
\delta \int_{M} R \Delta R d v & =\int_{M} \frac{1}{6} R^{3} d v-2 \int_{M} R|E|^{2} d v+8 \gamma_{1} \int_{M} R|W|^{2} d v, \text { i.e., } \\
\int_{M} R|E|^{2} d v & =\frac{1}{12} \int_{M} R^{3} d v+4 \gamma_{1} \int_{M} R|W|^{2} d v+\frac{\delta}{2} \int_{M}|\nabla R|^{2} d v  \tag{8.31}\\
& \geq \frac{1}{12} \int_{M} R^{3} d v-C \int_{M}\left(R^{2}+1\right) d v
\end{align*}
$$

Finally, to handle the first term on the right of (8.30) we claim that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}\left(|\nabla E|^{2}-\frac{1}{12}|\nabla R|^{2}\right) d v \geq \frac{1}{2} \int_{M} \delta \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R} d v-C \tag{8.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

which together with (8.31) inserted into (8.30) proves (8.28).
To prove (8.32) we differentiate $(*)_{\delta}$ and get

$$
\delta \nabla \Delta R=\frac{1}{3} R \nabla R-4|E| \nabla(|E|)-8 \gamma_{1} \nabla\left(|W|^{2}\right)
$$

multiply this by $\frac{\nabla R}{R}$ and integrate.
The proof of (8.29)is a modification of (8.21) in Lemma 8.13, and we will skip the details here [23].

We will now apply Lemma 8.15 to prove Proposition 8.14.

## Sketch of the proof of Proposition 8.14.

Bascially we are going to apply interpolation and boot-strapping methods to estimate the norms $w$. To do so, we first recall (7.3)

$$
R=e^{-2 w} R_{0}-6 \Delta w+6|\nabla w|^{2}
$$

Also

$$
\begin{align*}
|\nabla w| & =\left|\nabla_{0} w\right| e^{-w}, \text { or }\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|=|\nabla w| e^{w} \\
\left|\nabla_{0}^{2} w\right|^{2} & \lesssim\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2} e^{4 w}+e^{4 w}|\nabla w|^{4} \\
d v_{0} & =e^{-4 w} d v,  \tag{8.33}\\
\left(\int_{M}|f|^{12} d v_{0}\right)^{\frac{1}{4}} & \lesssim \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} f\right|_{0}^{3} d v_{0}+\int_{M}|f|^{3} d v_{0}
\end{align*}
$$

the latter resulting from the Sobolev embedding $W^{1,3}(M) \hookrightarrow L^{12}(M)$.

Step a. We claim that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{12} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{4}} \lesssim \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+1 \tag{8.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Taking $f:=\left|\nabla_{0} w\right| e^{-\frac{2}{3} w}$ in (8.33) one gets

$$
\int_{M}|f|^{12} d v_{0}=\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{12} e^{-8 w} d v_{0}=\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{12} d v
$$

whence by (8.33)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{12} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{4}} & \lesssim \int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0}\left(\left|\nabla_{0} w\right| e^{-\frac{2}{3} w}\right)\right|^{3} d v_{0}+\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{3} e^{-2 w} d v_{0} \\
& \lesssim \int_{M}\left(\left|\nabla_{0}^{2} w\right|^{3} e^{-2 w}+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|^{6} e^{-2 w}\right) d v_{0}+C \\
& \lesssim \int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{3} d v+\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+1
\end{aligned}
$$

Now, by (7.6) and (7.1)

$$
\begin{aligned}
\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{3} & \lesssim|A|^{3}+|\nabla w|^{6}+C \\
|A|^{2} & =|E|^{2}+\frac{R^{2}}{36}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{12} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{4}} & \lesssim \int_{M}\left(|A|^{3}+|\nabla w|^{6}+1\right) d v \\
& \lesssim \int_{M}\left(|E|^{3}+R^{3}+|\nabla w|^{6}+1\right) d v \\
& \lesssim \int_{M}\left(\delta|\nabla E|^{2}+\delta|\nabla R|^{2}+R^{3}+|\nabla w|^{6}+1\right) d v  \tag{8.35}\\
& \lesssim \delta \int_{M}|\nabla R|^{2} d v+\int_{M}\left(R^{3}+|\nabla w|^{6}+1\right) d v \\
& \lesssim \int_{(8.27)}\left(|\nabla w|^{6}+1\right) d v .
\end{align*}
$$

Notice that we used $(*)_{\delta}$ to express $|E|^{3}$ in terms of $|\nabla R|^{2}$. To be more precise, multiplying $(*)_{\delta}$ by $E$ and integrating one gets
$\int_{M}|E|^{3} d v \lesssim\left(\int_{M} R^{3} d v\right)^{\frac{2}{3}}\left(\int_{M} E^{3} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{3}}+\varepsilon \int_{M} E^{3} d v+\frac{C}{\varepsilon}+\frac{\delta}{2} \int_{M}|\nabla R||\nabla E| d v$,
for some small $\varepsilon>0$, hence

$$
\int_{M}|E|^{3} d v \lesssim \int_{M} R^{3} d v+\int_{M}|\nabla E|^{2} d v+\int_{M}|\nabla R|^{2} d v+C
$$

Note also that we used

$$
\begin{aligned}
\delta \int_{M}|\nabla R|^{2} d v & =\delta \int_{M}(-\Delta R) R d v \\
& \leq \delta \int_{M} \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R} d v+\delta \int_{M} R^{3} d v \\
& \lesssim \int_{(8.27)}\left(|\nabla w|^{6}+1\right) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

in the last step of (8.35).
Step b. Claim

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2} d v \lesssim \int_{M}\left(\delta|\nabla w|^{6}+R^{2}+1\right) d v \tag{8.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. Recall (7.3) which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{R}{6}=-\Delta w+|\nabla w|^{2}+\frac{1}{6} R_{0} e^{-2 w} \tag{8.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

The key observation is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v \leq \frac{1}{6} \int_{M} R|\nabla w|^{4} d v+C \int_{M}\left(\delta R^{3}+\delta|\nabla w|^{6}+R^{2}+1\right) d v \tag{8.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assuming (8.38) for the moment we can conclude

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{M} \Delta w|\nabla w|^{4} d v \leq C \delta \int_{M} R^{3} d v+C \int_{M}\left(\delta|\nabla w|^{6}+R^{2}+1\right) d v \tag{8.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

thus (by multiplication of the square of (8.37) with $|\nabla w|^{2}$ ),

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M}(\Delta w)^{2}|\nabla w|^{2} & \leq \int_{M}\left(\left(\frac{R}{6}\right)^{2}|\nabla w|^{2}-|\nabla w|^{6}+2 \Delta w|\nabla w|^{4}\right) d v \\
& +C \int_{M}\left(R^{2}+1\right) d v \\
& \leq \delta \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+C \int_{M}\left(R^{2}+1\right) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

By Bochner's formula we finally obtain

$$
\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}(\nabla w)^{2} \lesssim \delta \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+C \int_{M}\left(R^{2}+1\right) d v
$$

To see (8.38) recall from Lemma 7.2 (c) that Ric $\geq \frac{3 \sigma_{2}}{R}$, so that

$$
\begin{aligned}
2 \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{2} \operatorname{Ric}(\nabla w, \nabla w) d v & \geq \int_{M} \frac{6 \sigma_{2}}{R}|\nabla w|^{4} d v \\
& \geq-6 \delta \int_{(*)_{\delta}}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2} d v \\
& \gtrsim-\delta \int_{M} R^{3} d v-\delta \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v-\int_{M}\left(R^{2}+1\right) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand,

$$
\begin{aligned}
2 \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{2} \operatorname{Ric}(\nabla w, \nabla w) d v= & \frac{1}{6} \int_{M}\left(R|\nabla w|^{4}-|\nabla w|^{6}\right) d v \\
& +\frac{1}{6} \int_{M} R_{0} e^{-2 w}|\nabla w|^{4} d v \\
& +2 \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{2} A_{0}(\nabla w, \nabla w) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

where the last two terms are bounded by virtue of (8.2) in Proposition 8.5.

Step c. To estimate $\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v$ we proceed as follows:

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v=\int_{M}\langle\nabla w, \nabla w\rangle|\nabla w|^{4} d v \\
&=-\int_{M} w \Delta w|\nabla w|^{4} d v-\int_{M} w \nabla w \nabla\left(|\nabla w|^{4}\right) d v \\
& \lesssim \int_{M}|w|\left|\nabla^{2} w\right||\nabla w|^{4} d v \\
& \lesssim\left(\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} w^{2} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \\
& \lesssim\left(\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{12} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{8}}\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{4}|w|^{\frac{8}{3}} d v\right)^{\frac{3}{8}} \\
& \lesssim \\
&(8.4),(8.34) \\
&\left.\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(1+\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v & \lesssim \int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{2}|\nabla w|^{2} d v+1 \\
& \lesssim \delta(8.36) \\
& \int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v+\int_{M}\left(R^{2}+1\right) d v
\end{aligned}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v & \lesssim \int_{M} R^{2} d v+1 \\
& \lesssim\left(\int_{M} R^{3} d v\right)^{\frac{2}{3}}+1 \\
& \lesssim\left(\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v\right)^{\frac{2}{3}}+1
\end{aligned}
$$

i.e., $\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{6} d v \leq C$, and by (8.34), $\int_{M}|\nabla w|^{12} d v \lesssim C$, and $\int_{M}\left|\nabla^{2} w\right|^{3} d v \lesssim C$.

Corollary 8.18 There is a constant $C=C\left(g_{0}\right)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta \int_{M} \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R^{2}} d v \leq C \tag{8.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Proof. We know already that

$$
\delta \int_{M} \frac{(\Delta R)^{2}}{R} d v \lesssim \int_{M} R^{3} d v+1 \lesssim C
$$

Thus it suffices to show $\min _{M} R(\cdot) \geq c_{0}>0$, which will follow from the maximum principle applied to

$$
\begin{aligned}
\delta \Delta R & =8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+\frac{1}{6} R^{2}-2|E|^{2} \\
& \leq 8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}+\frac{1}{6} R^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence at the minimum point $p \in M$ of $R$ we have $\Delta R(p) \geq 0$ and therefore

$$
\frac{1}{6} R^{2}(p) \geq-8 \gamma_{1}|W|^{2}(p) \geq 8\left|\gamma_{1}\right| \min _{M}|W|^{2}(\cdot)
$$

So if $|W|^{2} \underset{(5.9)}{=} e^{-4 w}|W|_{0}^{2} \neq 0$ on $M$, then we are done, since then

$$
R^{2} \geq 48\left|\gamma_{1}\right| \min _{M}|W|^{2}(\cdot)=: c_{0}
$$

If $|W|=0$ somewhere, choose a section $\eta \in \Gamma\left(\operatorname{Sym}\left(T^{*} M^{4} \otimes T^{*} M^{4}\right)\right)$, which denotes the bundle of symmetric ( 0,2 )-tensors on $M^{4}$, e.g. $\eta=$ any Riemannian metric on $M^{4}$. Then $|\eta|^{2}=e^{-4 w}|\eta|_{g_{0}}^{2}$, and we look at the equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta \Delta R=4 \sigma_{2}+8 \gamma_{1}|\eta|^{2} \tag{**}
\end{equation*}
$$

and apply the maximum principle as above.
Notice that the only relevant fact about $|W|^{2}$ we used was the behavior under conformal change, see (5.9). So instead of $\mathrm{I}[w]$ in the definition of $F[w]$ or $F_{\delta}[w]$ one uses

$$
\mathrm{I}^{\prime}[w]:=4 \int_{M} w|\eta|^{2} d v-\int_{M}|\eta|^{2} d v \log f_{M} e^{4 w} d v
$$

We conclude with
Proposition 8.19 There is a constant $\delta_{0}<1$ such that for each $s \in[0,5)$ there is a constant $C=C\left(s, . g_{0}\right)$, such that for all $0<\delta \leq \delta_{0}$ the following holds:

Any solution $w_{\delta} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ of $(* *)_{\delta}$ with $R_{g_{w}}>0, \int_{M} w d v_{0}=0$, $\int_{M} \sigma_{w}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) d v_{g_{w}}>0$ satisfies

$$
\int_{M}\left|\nabla_{0}^{2} w\right|^{s} d v_{0} \leq C
$$

We will skip the details of the proof here. [23] The idea of the proof is to apply the same arguments as above to the terms

$$
\mathrm{I}:=\int_{M} S^{i j} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R^{p+1} d v=0
$$

and

$$
\mathrm{II}:=\int_{M} S^{i j} \nabla_{i}\left(R^{p} \nabla_{j} V\right) d v=0
$$

for $p<2$.

As an immediate consequence we deduce from Sobolev's embedding theorem
Corollary 8.20 There is a constant $\delta_{0}<1$, such that for each $\alpha \in(0,1)$ there is a constant $C_{\alpha}$, such that the following holds: for all $\delta \in\left(0, \delta_{0}\right]$, any solution $w_{\delta} \in C^{\infty}(M)$ of $(* *)_{\delta}$ with $R_{g_{w}}>0, \int_{M} w d v_{0}=0, \int_{M} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) d v_{g_{w}}>0$ satisfies

$$
\|w\|_{C^{1, \alpha}} \leq C_{\alpha}
$$

## § 9 Smoothing via the Yamabe flow

Theorem 9.1 Let $g=e^{2 w} g_{0}$ be a solution of $(* *)_{\delta}$ with positive scalar curvature, normalized so that $\int w d v_{0}=0$. Assume also $\int \sigma_{2}\left(A_{0}\right) d v_{0}>0$. Then for $\delta$ sufficiently small, there exists $v \in C^{\infty}(M)$, such that $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{h}\right)>0$ for $h=e^{2 v} g$.

The key step is to look at the evolution of the quantity $k / R$ under the Yamabe flow, where

$$
\begin{equation*}
k:=\sigma_{2}+2 \gamma_{1}|\eta|^{2}, \tag{9.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

$|\eta|>0$, on $M$, and $|\eta|_{g_{w}}=e^{-2 w}|\eta|$. Notice that by $(* *)_{\delta}, \delta \Delta R=4 k$. We will assume an a-priori bound in $L^{p}, p>4$, for the curvature of the initial data. Throughout Chapter 9 we assume that the hypotheses of Theorem 9.1 hold.

Proposition 9.2 Consider

$$
\begin{cases}\frac{\partial h}{\partial t} & =-\frac{1}{3} R h  \tag{9.2}\\ h(0, \cdot) & =g:=e^{2 w} g_{0}\end{cases}
$$

Then there exists $T_{0}=T_{0}\left(g_{0}\right)$, such that (9.2) has a unique smooth solution $h \in$ $C^{\infty}\left(\left[0, T_{0}\right), M\right)$.

Proof. Consider the normalized Yamabe flow

$$
\begin{cases}\frac{\partial h^{*}}{\partial t} & =-\frac{1}{n-1}(R-r) h^{*}  \tag{9.3}\\ r(t) & =\int_{M} R d v / \int_{M} d v \\ h^{*}(0, \cdot) & =h_{0}^{*}\end{cases}
$$

on $\left(M^{n}, h_{0}\right)$. Then (9.3) admits a unique smooth solution for all time (see [58], [94]). When $n=4$ (9.2) and (9.3) differ only by a rescaling in time and space. (9.3) guarantees that the volume is normalized, hence we are only required to find a time interval $\left[0, T_{0}\left(g_{0}\right)\right)$, on which $\operatorname{vol}(M, h)$ is under control.

Some basic facts about the Yamabe flow are summarized in

Lemma 9.3 ([94]) Under (9.2) one has

$$
\begin{gather*}
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(d v)=-\frac{2}{3} R d v  \tag{9.4}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R=\Delta R+\frac{1}{3} R^{2}  \tag{9.5}\\
\frac{\partial}{\partial t} R_{i j}=\frac{1}{3} \nabla_{i} \nabla_{j} R+\frac{1}{6}(\Delta R) g_{i j} \tag{9.6}
\end{gather*}
$$

Assuming the validity of (9.4) - (9.6), we now finish the proof of Proposition 9.2 as follows:

Since by $(* *)_{\delta} R_{g}=R_{h(0, \cdot)}>C\left(g_{0}\right)>0$ we infer from (9.5) that at a minimum point $p_{t} \in M$

$$
\frac{\partial R}{\partial t}\left(p_{t}\right)=\Delta R\left(p_{t}\right)+\frac{1}{3} R^{2}\left(p_{t}\right) \geq \frac{1}{3} R^{2}\left(p_{t}\right)>0
$$

hence $R$ remains positive under the flow.
The volume is decreasing, since by (9.4)

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{M} d v=-\frac{2}{3} \int_{M} R d v<0
$$

In addition,

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{M} d v \geq-\frac{2}{3}\left(\int_{M} R^{2} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\int_{M} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}
$$

whence

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d}{d t}\left(\int_{M} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \geq-\frac{1}{3}\left(\int_{M} R^{2} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \tag{9.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

On the other hand, by (9.4) and (9.5),

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{M} R^{2} d v & =\int_{M} 2 R \frac{d R}{d t} d v+\int_{M} R^{2} \frac{d}{d t}(d v) \\
& =\int_{M} 2 R\left(\Delta R+\frac{1}{3} R^{2}\right) d v+\int_{M} R^{2}\left(-\frac{2}{3} R\right) d v  \tag{9.8}\\
& =-2 \int_{M}|\nabla R|^{2} d v \leq 0
\end{align*}
$$

(9.7) and (9.8) imply

$$
\left[\operatorname{vol}(M, h(0, \cdot))^{\frac{1}{2}}-\frac{\left\|R_{g}\right\|_{L^{2}}}{3} \cdot t\right]^{2} \leq \operatorname{vol}(M, h(t, \cdot)) \leq \operatorname{vol}(M, h(0, \cdot))
$$

and $\left\|R_{g}\right\|_{L^{2}}$ is bounded according to Proposition 8.14.
Proposition 9.4 Fix $s \in(4,5)$. Then there is $T_{1}=T_{1}\left(g_{0}\right)<T_{0}$, such that for $t \leq T_{1}$ the solution $h=e^{2 v} g$ of (9.2) satisfies
(a) $\left\|\operatorname{Ric}_{h}\right\|_{L^{s}} \leq 2\left\|\operatorname{Ric}_{g}\right\|_{L^{s}}$,
(b) $\left\|\operatorname{Ric}_{h}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C_{2} t^{-\frac{2}{s}}$, where $C_{2}=C_{2}\left(g_{0}\right)$,
(c) $\|v\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C\left(g_{0}\right)$.

Proof. The proof relies on general estimates for the Yamabe flow (see [93]) as a parabolic evolution equation summarized in

Proposition 9.5 (Moser iteration for parabolic equations, see [93]).
Assume that with respect to the metric $h(t), 0 \leq t \leq T$ the following Sobolev inequality holds:

$$
\left(\int_{M}|\varphi|^{\frac{2 n}{n-2}} d v\right)^{\frac{n-2}{n}} \leq C_{S}\left[\int_{M}|\nabla \varphi|^{2} d v+\int_{M} \varphi^{2} d v\right]
$$

for all $\varphi \in W^{1,2}\left(M^{n}\right)$. Suppose b is a nonnegative function on $[0, T] \times M^{n}$, such that

$$
\frac{\partial}{\partial t}(d v) \leq b d v
$$

Let $q>n$, and $u \geq 0$ be a function satisfying

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} \leq \Delta u+b u \\
\sup _{0 \leq t \leq T}\|b\|_{L^{q / 2}} \leq \beta
\end{array}
$$

Then for all $p_{0}>1$, there exists a constant $C=C\left(n, q, p_{0}, C_{S}\right)$ such that for $0 \leq t \leq T$,

$$
\|u(t, \cdot)\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq C e^{C t} t^{-\frac{n}{2 p_{0}}}\|u(0, \cdot)\|_{L^{p_{0}}}
$$

Moreover, for given $p \geq p_{0}>1$, one has for all $t \in[0, T]$,

$$
\frac{d}{d t} \int_{M} u^{p} d v+\int_{M}\left|\nabla\left(u^{p / 2}\right)\right|^{2} d v \leq C p^{\frac{2 n}{q-n}} \int_{M} u^{p} d v
$$

where $C=C\left(n, q, p_{0}, C_{S}\right)$.
Remark 9.6 When applying Proposition 9.5 to prove Proposition 9.4, we only require that $s>\frac{n}{2}=2$ for $n=4$. Also, in our application, we can control the Sobolev constant $C_{S}$ by the Yamabe constant $Y\left(M, g_{0}\right)$ which we assume to be positive of $\left(M, g_{0}\right)[23]$.

The following result contains the key inequality for the proof of Theorem 9.1.
Proposition 9.7 For $k$ as defined in (9.1), denote

$$
\varphi:=\max \left(-\frac{k}{R}, 0\right)
$$

Then for $t \leq T_{1}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t} \leq \Delta \varphi+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}| \varphi+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}| \tag{9.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some constant $C_{1}=C_{1}\left(g_{0}\right)$.

Proof. This statement is proved by straight-forward but lengthy computations, we refer to [23].

Now we are going to sketch the proof of Theorem 9.1.
First we will modify $\varphi$ to " remove " the last term in (9.9). For this purpose, we define $\varphi_{1}(t):=\exp \left(\frac{s}{s-2} C_{1} C_{2} t^{\frac{s-2}{s}}\right)-1$, hence $\varphi_{1}(0)=0$, and since $s>2$, one easily checks that

$$
\frac{\partial \varphi_{1}}{\partial t}(t)=C_{1} C_{2}\left(1+\varphi_{1}(t)\right) t^{-\frac{2}{s}}
$$

Then $u:=\varphi-\varphi_{1}$ satisfies

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} \quad & =\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t}-\frac{\partial \varphi_{1}}{\partial t} \\
& \leq \Delta \varphi+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}| \varphi+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}|-\frac{\partial \varphi_{1}}{\partial t} \\
& =\Delta u+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}| u+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}| \varphi_{1}+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}|-\frac{\partial \varphi_{1}}{\partial t} \\
& \quad \Delta u+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}| u+C_{1} C_{2}\left(1+\varphi_{1}\right) t^{-\frac{2}{s}}-\frac{\partial \varphi_{1}}{\partial t} \\
& =\Delta u+C_{1}|\operatorname{Ric}| u .
\end{aligned}
$$

Applying Proposition 9.5 for $b=c_{1} \mid$ Ric $\mid, p_{0}=2, q=2 s, s>4$, we conclude for $t \leq T_{1}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|u\|_{L^{\infty}}=\left\|\varphi-\varphi_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} & \leq C t^{-1}\left\|\varphi(0, \cdot)-\varphi_{1}(0)\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& =\frac{C}{t}\|\varphi(0, \cdot)\|_{L^{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

On the other hand, by $(* *)_{\delta}$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\|\varphi(0, \cdot)\|_{L^{2}} & =\left\|\frac{\sigma_{2}(A)+2 \gamma_{1}|\eta|^{2}}{R}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& =\left\|\frac{\delta}{(* *)_{\delta}} \frac{\Delta_{g} R_{g}}{R_{g}}\right\|_{L^{2}} \\
& \leq C\left(g_{0}\right) \delta^{\frac{1}{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

Thus $\|u\|_{L^{\infty}}=\left\|\varphi-\varphi_{1}\right\|_{L^{\infty}} \leq \frac{C \delta^{\frac{1}{2}}}{t}$ for all $t \leq T_{1}$. That is, by definition of $\varphi$ in Proposition 9.7,

$$
\frac{1}{R}\left(\sigma_{2}+2 \gamma_{1}|\eta|^{2}\right) \geq-\varphi_{1}(t)-\frac{C \delta^{\frac{1}{2}}}{t}
$$

hence

$$
\sigma_{2}+2 \gamma_{1}|\eta|^{2} \geq R\left(-\varphi_{1}(t)-C \frac{\delta^{\frac{1}{2}}}{t}\right) \geq C t^{-\frac{2}{s}}\left(-t^{1-\frac{2}{s}}-\delta^{\frac{1}{2}} t^{-1}\right)
$$

since $R \leq C t^{-\frac{2}{s}}$ by Proposition 9.4 (b), and $\varphi_{1}(t) \leq C t^{1-\frac{2}{s}}$ by the simple estimate $e^{x}-1 \leq|x| e^{|x|}$ for $t \leq T_{1}$.

Consequently,

$$
\sigma_{2} \geq-2 \gamma_{1}|\eta|^{2}-C_{3} t^{1-\frac{4}{s}}-C_{3} \delta^{\frac{1}{2}} t^{-1-\frac{2}{s}}
$$

Recall that $|\eta|^{2}=e^{-4(v+w)}|\eta|_{0}^{2} \geq C\left(g_{0}\right)>0$, by Proposition 9.4 (c). Hence there is a constant $C_{4}=C_{4}\left(g_{0}\right)>0$ so that $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{t}\right) \geq C_{4}-C_{3} t^{1-\frac{4}{s}}-C_{3} \delta^{\frac{1}{2}} t^{-1-\frac{2}{s}}$ for all $t \leq T_{1}$.

Let $t_{0}:=\min \left\{T_{1}, \hat{t}_{0}\right\}$, where $\hat{t}_{0}$ is chosen such that

$$
C_{3} \hat{t}_{0}^{\left(1-\frac{4}{s}\right)}=\frac{1}{4} C_{4}
$$

then at $t=t_{0}$

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{t_{0}}\right) \geq \frac{3}{4} C_{4}-C_{3} \delta^{\frac{1}{2}} t_{0}^{-1-\frac{2}{s}}>\frac{1}{2} C_{4}
$$

if $\delta<\delta_{0}$ is sufficiently small. This means that the metric $h=h\left(t_{0}, \cdot\right) \in C^{\infty}(M)$ satisfies

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{t_{0}}\right)=\sigma_{2}\left(A_{h\left(t_{0}, \cdot\right)}\right)>0
$$

## $\S 10$ Deforming $\sigma_{2}$ to a constant function

In this section we will outline the result in [24]. The goal is to deform $\sigma_{2}=f$, where $f \in C^{\infty}(M), f>0$, into $\sigma_{2}=c$, where $c>0$ is a constant on a compact 4 -manifold. To achieve this, we will use the method of continuity together with a degree-theoretic argument.

To apply the method of continuity, the main step is to obtain a-priori estimates for solutions $w$ of the equation $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f$ for a given positive function $f$. First we observe that on $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, due to the non-compactness of the differmorphism group on $S^{4}$, we do not have an a-prior sup-norm bound of the conformal factor for $w$ with $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) \equiv 6$. That is, if we consider the family of metrics $g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{c}$ on $S^{4}$ defined by $e^{2 w} g_{c}=\phi^{*} g_{c}$ for some differmorphism $\phi$ of $S^{4}$ (actually we can take $\phi$ to be a rotation and dilation on $S^{4}$ ), then $R_{g_{w}} \equiv 12, E_{g_{w}} \equiv 0$ and

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=\frac{1}{2} \frac{1}{12}(4 \cdot 3)^{2}=6 \quad \text { on } S^{4}
$$

To see that there is no a-prior sup-norm bound of such family of $w$, we may use the stereographic projection map $S^{4}-\{\mathbb{N}\}$ to $\mathbb{R}^{4}$, where $\mathbb{N}$ is the north pole and observe that in Euclidean coordinates on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$, $w$ corresponds to the sequence

$$
w=w_{\lambda}=\log \frac{2 \lambda}{\lambda^{2}+\left|x-x_{0}\right|^{2}}
$$

with $\lambda>0, x_{0} \in \mathbb{R}^{4}$. Thus the supremum norm of $w_{\lambda}$ tends to infinity as $\lambda \rightarrow 0$.
The following theorem indicates that $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$ is the only exceptional case among all compact 4-manifolds.

Theorem 10.1 On $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$, suppose that $R_{g_{w}}>0, g_{w}=e^{2 w} g_{0}$, and

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right)=f>0
$$

for some smooth function $f$. If $\left(M^{4}, g_{0}\right)$ is not conformally equivalent to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$, then there is a constant $C=C\left(\|f\|_{C^{3}}, g_{0},(\min f)^{-1}\right)$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{M^{4}}\left(e^{w(\cdot)}+\left|\nabla_{0} w\right|(\cdot)\right) \leq C \tag{10.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Once the estimate (10.1) is established, we can apply Theorem 8.10 to establish $w \in C^{1,1}(M)$, and then since $\left(\sigma_{2}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}$ is concave, we can apply the results of Evans [42] and Krylov [60] to establish that $w \in C^{2, \alpha}(M)$, hence $w \in C^{\infty}(M)$. That is, we have the following corollary.
Corollary A.
There is a constant $C$, such that $\|w\|_{C^{\infty}} \leq C$, if $f \in C^{\infty}(M)$.

We then apply a degree theoretic argument to deform $\sigma_{2}$ to a constant. We will skip this part of the argument in this note and refer the readers to the article [24].

Theorem 10.2 Assume that $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)=f>0$, then there is a metric $g_{w}=e^{2 w} g$ such that

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) \equiv 1
$$

## Outline of the proof of Theorem 10.1

We will proceed in five steps:

Step 1. Given a sequence of functions $w_{i} \in C^{\infty}(M)$, such that (10.1) fails to hold we use a blow-up argument to construct a new sequence converging to a solution of $\sigma_{2} \equiv 1$ or $\sigma_{2} \equiv 0$ on $\left(\mathbb{R}^{4},|d x|^{2}\right)$. The main technical difficulty is the absence of a Harnack inequality for solutions of $\sigma_{2}=f>0 .{ }^{5}$ Hence even if the suitably dilated sequence may be shown to be bounded from above, there is a lack of a lower bound.

Step 2. Classify the solutions of $\sigma_{2} \equiv 0$ on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ according to
Theorem 10.3 Suppose $g_{w}=e^{2 w}|d x|^{2}$ is a conformal metric on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ with $w \in$ $C^{1,1}\left(\mathbb{R}^{4}\right)$ satisfying

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) \equiv 0, R_{g_{w}} \geq 0
$$

then $w \equiv$ const.
Step 3. Classify the solutions of $\sigma_{2} \equiv$ constant $>0$ on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ according to
Theorem 10.4 Suppose $g_{w}=e^{2 w}|d x|^{2}=: u^{2}|d x|^{2}$ is a conformal metric on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ with

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) \equiv 6 \quad\left(\Rightarrow R_{g_{w}} \equiv \pm 12\right)
$$

then $u(x)=\left(a|x|^{2}+\sum_{i=1}^{4} b_{i} x_{i}+c\right)^{-1}$ for some constants $a, b, c$. In particular, $g_{w}$ is the pull-back of the round metric $g_{c}$ on $S^{4}$ to $\mathbb{R}^{4}$.

Step 4. The previous two steps together with the following important Lemma by Gursky will be used to establish Theorem 10.1.

Lemma 10.5 [54] Let $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ with $Y\left(M^{4}, g\right)>0$. Then $\int_{M} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right) d v_{g} \leq 16 \pi^{2}$ and equality holds if and only if $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ is conformally equivalent to $\left(S^{4}, g_{c}\right)$.

We remark that this is a restatement of Lemma 6.12 in Section 6. As on $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ we have

$$
Q_{g}=-\frac{1}{12} \Delta R_{g}+\frac{1}{2} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)
$$

[^4]Hence

$$
k_{g}:=\int_{M} Q_{g} d v_{g}=\frac{1}{2} \int_{M} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right) d v_{g}
$$

Thus $\int_{M} \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right) d v_{g} \leq 16 \pi^{2}$ if and only if $k_{g} \leq 8 \pi^{2}$.

## Remarks.

1. Step 3 above works also for $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right) \equiv$ const. on $\mathbb{R}^{n}$ for $n=4,5$, and for $n \geq 6$ under the additional assumption that $\int_{M} d v_{g}<\infty$. For $n=4, \sigma_{2}>0$ and $R>0$ imply that $\int d v_{g}<\infty$. We remark that for $n \geq 5$ there is a metric with $\sigma_{2}>0, R>0$ with $\int d v_{g}$ unbounded (obtained by a perturbation of a metric on $S^{n-1} \times S^{1}$ ). see the article [25].
2. The classification result of Step 3 should be compared to the result of Caffarelli-Gidas-Spruck [16] for

$$
\begin{aligned}
-\Delta u & =c_{n} u^{\frac{n+2}{n-2}} \text { on } \mathbb{R}^{n} \\
& \Rightarrow u=\left(\frac{\lambda}{\lambda^{2}+\left|x-x_{0}\right|^{2}}\right)^{\frac{n-2}{2}}
\end{aligned}
$$

On $\left(S^{n}, g_{c}\right)$ the above result is Obata [71] theorem, which states that states that if $u>0$ satisfies

$$
-\Delta u+R_{0} u=c u^{\frac{n+2}{n-2}} \quad \text { on } S^{n}
$$

for $R_{0}=n(n-1)$, then $u^{\frac{4}{n-2}} g_{c}=\phi^{*} g_{c}$ for a conformal transformation $\phi: S^{n} \rightarrow S^{n}$.

Such a classification result has been established by J. Viaclovsky [90] for general $\sigma_{k}$ (see also Corollary 8.12 for $k=2$ on $S^{4}$ ):

Theorem 10.6 (Viaclovsky [90]) If $\sigma_{k}\left(A_{g}\right) \equiv$ const. on $S^{n}$ for $g=u^{\frac{4}{n-2}}|d x|^{2}$, then $u=\left(a|x|^{2}+b_{i} x_{i}+c\right)^{-\frac{2}{n-2}}$ for some constants $a, b, c$.

Step 1. We will use an unusual blow-up sequence $w_{k}$, since we do not have a Harnack inequality to derive a lower bound on $w_{k}$ once we have an upper bound.

Assuming that the statement (10.1) is not true, we find a sequence of metrics $g_{k}=e^{2 w_{k}} g_{0}$, and smooth functions $f_{k}$, such that $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{k}}\right)=f_{k}$ with $0<C_{0} \leq$ $f_{k} \leq C_{0}^{-1}$ and $\left\|f_{k}\right\|_{C^{2}} \leq C_{1}$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\max _{M}\left(e^{w_{k}}+\left|\nabla_{0} w_{k}\right|\right) \rightarrow \infty \text { as } k \rightarrow \infty \tag{10.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assume that $p_{k} \in M$ are the corresponding maximum points. Choosing normal coordinates $\Phi_{k}$ at $p_{k}$ we may identify a neighbourhood of $p_{k}$ with the unit
ball $B_{1}(0) \subset \mathbb{R}^{4}$ with $\Phi_{k}\left(p_{k}\right)=0 \in \mathbb{R}^{4}$. Define dilations

$$
\begin{aligned}
T_{\varepsilon}: \mathbb{R}^{4} & \longrightarrow \mathbb{R}^{4} \\
x & \longrightarrow T_{\varepsilon}(x):=\varepsilon x
\end{aligned}
$$

and consider $w_{k, \varepsilon}=T_{\varepsilon}^{*} w_{k}+\log \varepsilon$, hence

$$
\nabla_{0} w_{k, \varepsilon}+e^{w_{k, \varepsilon}}=\varepsilon\left(\nabla_{0} w_{k}+e^{w_{k}}\right) \circ T_{\varepsilon}
$$

Now choose for each $k, \varepsilon=\varepsilon_{k}$ such that the right-hand side equals 1 at $x=0$, i.e.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{0}\left(w_{k, \varepsilon_{k}}\right)+\left.e^{w_{k, \varepsilon_{k}}}\right|_{x=0}=1 \tag{10.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $w_{k, \varepsilon_{k}}$ is defined on $B_{\frac{1}{\varepsilon_{k}}}(0)$.
Notice that $0 \in \mathbb{R}^{4}$ corresponds to a maximal point $p_{k} \in M$ for each $k$, with value normalized to 1 by (10.3), i.e. with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{0}\left(w_{k, \varepsilon_{k}}\right)+e^{w_{k, \varepsilon_{k}}} \leq 1 \text { on } B_{\frac{1}{\varepsilon_{k}}}(0) \tag{10.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since the $\varepsilon_{k}$ are chosen, we change notation by setting $w_{k}:=w_{k, \varepsilon_{k}}$ from now on. Denote the pull back $g_{k}^{*}:=e^{2 w_{k}} T_{\varepsilon_{k}}^{*} g_{0}$, then $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{k}^{*}}\right)=f_{k} \circ T_{\varepsilon_{k}}$ with

$$
g_{0}^{k}=T_{\varepsilon_{k}}^{*} g_{0} \rightarrow|d x|^{2}
$$

in the $C^{2, \beta}$-topology.

## Case 1.

$$
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty} e^{w_{k}(0)}=0
$$

i.e. $w_{k}(0) \rightarrow-\infty$, then the shifted functions $\bar{w}_{k}:=w_{k}-w_{k}(0)$ with the corresponding metrics $\bar{g}_{k}:=e^{2 \bar{w}_{k}} g_{0}$, satisfy

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\bar{w}_{k}(0)=0  \tag{10.5}\\
\left|d \bar{w}_{k}\right| \leq 1 \text { on } B_{\frac{1}{\varepsilon_{k}}}(0) \subset \mathbb{R}^{4} \\
\lim _{k \rightarrow \infty}\left|d \bar{w}_{k}(0)\right|=1 \\
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{\bar{g}_{k}^{*}}\right)=e^{4 w_{k}(0)} f_{k} \circ T_{\varepsilon_{k}} \text { on } B_{\frac{1}{\varepsilon_{k}}}(0) \subset \mathbb{R}^{4}
\end{array}\right.
$$

Thus $\max _{B_{\rho}(0)}\left|\bar{w}_{k}\right| \leq \varrho$, so the $\bar{w}_{k}$ are uniformly bounded in the $C^{1}$-topology on compact subsets of $\mathbb{R}^{4}$. To obtain the necessary $C^{1,1}$-bounds we appeal to a local version of Theorem 8.10 on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ :

Theorem 10.7 Suppose $g=e^{2 w}|d x|^{2}=: e^{2 w} g_{0}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$ satisfies $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)=f \geq 0$ and $R_{g}>0$ on $B_{\varrho}(0)$, then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|\nabla_{0}^{2} w\right|_{L^{\infty}\left(B_{\varrho / 2}\right)} \leq C\left(\|w\|_{L^{\infty}\left(B_{e}\right)},\left\|\nabla_{0} w\right\|_{L^{\infty}\left(B_{e}\right)},\|f\|_{C^{2}\left(B_{\varrho}\right)}, \varrho\right) \tag{10.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

(10.6) implies in our situation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sup _{B_{\varrho}(0)}\left|\nabla^{2} \bar{w}_{k}\right| \leq C_{\varrho} \tag{10.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Case 2.

$$
\limsup _{k \rightarrow \infty} e^{w_{k}(0)}=\delta_{0}>0
$$

then

$$
\begin{cases}-c_{2} & \leq w_{k}(0) \underset{(10.4)}{\leq} 0  \tag{10.8}\\ \left|d w_{k}\right| & \leq 1 \text { on } B_{\frac{1}{\varepsilon_{k}}}(0)\end{cases}
$$

Again as before we obtain

$$
\sup _{B_{\varrho}(0)}\left|\nabla^{2} w_{k}\right| \leq C_{\varrho}
$$

In contrast to Case 1 we even get uniform $C^{2, \beta}$-bounds by the theory of Evans [42] and Krylov [60], since the $w_{k}$ satisfy the uniformly elliptic equations

$$
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{k}}\right)=f_{k} \circ T_{\varepsilon_{k}} \geq \frac{1}{C_{0}}
$$

Recall that for the ellipticity one has to check that (by Lemma 7.2 (c))

$$
-\frac{\partial \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{k}}\right)}{\partial\left(w_{k}\right)_{i j}}=2 S_{i j} \geq \frac{6 \sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{k}}\right)}{R_{g_{k}}} g_{i j}
$$

which is uniformly positive definite.
Hence in Case 2 we are able to conclude that the sequence $\left\{w_{k}\right\}$ is uniformly bounded in the $C^{2, \beta}$-topology, hence in $C^{k}\left(\mathbb{R}^{4}\right)$ for all $k$.

Case 1 can be excluded by means of Theorem 10.3 , which will be proven in Step 2. In fact, so far we know by (10.7) that $\bar{w}_{k} \rightarrow \bar{w}$ in $C_{\text {loc }}^{1, \beta}\left(\mathbb{R}^{4}\right)$ with

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sigma_{2}\left(A_{\bar{g}_{w}}\right)=0 \text { and } \bar{w} \in C^{1,1}\left(\mathbb{R}^{4}\right) \tag{10.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

$R_{\bar{g}_{w}} \geq 0$, where (10.9) is meant to hold in the weak sense, i.e. a.e. on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$, or in integrated form. Hence $\bar{w} \equiv$ const., in particular $\nabla \bar{w}(0)=0$ contradicting (10.5).

Step 2. Proof of Theorem 10.3. Fix $B_{\varrho}:=B_{\varrho}(0)$, choose a cut-off function $\eta \equiv 1$ on $B_{\varrho}, \eta \equiv 0$ on $\mathbb{R}^{4} \backslash B_{2 \varrho}$ with $|\nabla \eta| \lesssim \varrho^{-1},\left|\nabla^{2} \eta\right| \lesssim \varrho^{-2}$, and set $\bar{w}:=$ $\underset{B_{2 \varrho}}{f} w d x$.

Multiply the expression (7.10) for $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g_{w}}\right) e^{4 w}$, which holds a.e. on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$, by the function $(w-\bar{w}) \eta^{4}$ and integrate on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$. Using the assumption of Theorem 10.3 one obtains

$$
\int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}}|\nabla w|^{4} \eta^{4} d x \lesssim\left(\int_{A_{\varrho}}|\nabla w|^{4} \eta^{4} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}
$$

where $A_{\varrho}:=B_{2 \varrho}-B_{\varrho}$. Since $\int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}}|\nabla w|^{4} d x \leq\|w\|_{C^{1,1}}^{4}<\infty$, we have

$$
\lim _{\varrho \rightarrow \infty} \int_{A_{\varrho}}|\nabla w|^{4} \eta^{4} d x=0
$$

hence $\lim _{\varrho \rightarrow \infty} \int_{B_{\varrho}}|\nabla w|^{4} d x=0$, i.e. $|\nabla w| \equiv 0$ on compact subsets of $\mathbb{R}^{4}$, which implies that $w \equiv$ const.

Notice that this proof works also in the case, when $\sigma_{2} \equiv \varepsilon \ll 1$, which will be used in the degree-theoretic argument later.

Step 3. Proof of Theorem 10.4. We recall the geometric proof of Obata's Uniqueness Theorem on $S^{n}$ : If $R_{g} \equiv$ const. on $S^{n}$, then $|E| \equiv 0$ and $g=\phi^{*}\left(g_{c}\right)$ for some conformal transformation $\phi: S^{n} \rightarrow S^{n}$. For simplicity we review Obata's proof for $n=4$. Then $E_{i j}=-2 u^{-1}\left(\nabla_{g}^{2} u\right)_{i j}+\frac{1}{2} u^{-1}\left(\Delta_{g} u\right) g_{i j}$, where $g=u^{2} g_{0}$, and calculating in the $g$ metric $\left(d v:=d v_{g}\right)$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{S^{4}}|E|^{2} u d v & =\int_{S^{4}} g(E, E) u d v \\
& =-2 \int_{S^{4}} g\left(E, \nabla_{g}^{2} u\right) d v \\
& =2 \int_{S^{4}} g(\delta E, d u) d v \\
(\delta E=0) & =12 \int_{S^{4}} g\left(\frac{1}{4} d R, d u\right) d v \underset{(R \equiv \text { const. })}{=} 0 .
\end{aligned}
$$

On $\mathbb{R}^{4}$, and assuming $R_{g} \equiv$ const., we use a cut-off function to imitate Obata's proof:

$$
\begin{aligned}
\int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} g(E, E) u \eta^{2} d v & =-2 \int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} g\left(E, \nabla_{g}^{2} u\right) \eta^{2} d v \\
& =\int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} g(\delta E, d u) \eta^{2} d v+2 \int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} g(E, d u) \nabla_{g}\left(\eta^{2}\right) d v \\
& \left.\leq \int_{\left(R_{g}\right.} \equiv \text { const. }\right) \\
& \left.\lesssim E\right|_{g}\left|\nabla_{g} u \| \nabla_{g}\left(\eta^{2}\right)\right| d v \\
& \lesssim\left(\int_{A_{\varrho}}|E|_{g}^{2} u \eta^{2} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\int_{A_{\varrho}}\left|\nabla_{g} u\right|^{2}\left|\nabla_{g} \eta\right|^{2} u^{-1} d v\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence it suffices to prove

$$
\begin{align*}
\int_{A_{\varrho}}\left|\nabla_{g} u\right|^{2}\left|\nabla_{g} \eta\right|^{2} u^{-1} d v & =\int_{A_{\varrho}}\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2}\left|\nabla_{0} \eta\right|^{2} u^{-1} d x  \tag{10.10}\\
& \leq C \text { independ of } \varrho .
\end{align*}
$$

Since then (as before) $E \equiv 0$ follows by taking $\varrho \rightarrow \infty$. To prove (10.10) one may look at the situation for general $n$, and (10.10) amounts to showing that

$$
I(\varrho):=\frac{1}{\varrho^{2}} \int_{A_{\varrho}}\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2} u^{-1} d x
$$

is bounded independent of $\varrho$. For $n=3$ this can easily be done by multiplying the differential equation $-\Delta_{0} u=c_{3} u^{\frac{n+2}{n-2}}\left(=c_{3} u^{5}\right)$ by $u^{-\frac{n-2}{2}}$ to get $I_{3}(\varrho) \leq C$. If there is a volume bound then one can easily check that $u^{-1} \leq c|x|^{2}$ for all $n$, and it remains to show that

$$
\int_{A_{\varrho}}\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2} d x \leq C \quad \text { independent of } \varrho .
$$

In general, a volume bound is too strong an assumption. For $n=4$ in our situation we proceed with a similar strategy replacing $R_{g}$ by $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right)$ and $E$ by some tensor $L$ with similar properties.

Lemma 10.8 Suppose $\left(M^{4}, g\right)$ is locally conformally flat (e.g. for $\left.g=e^{2 w}|d x|^{2}\right)$, then consider the tensor

$$
L:=\frac{1}{4}|E|^{2} g+\frac{1}{6} R E-E^{2} .
$$

Then

$$
\begin{cases}T r_{g} L & =0  \tag{10.11}\\ \delta L & =\frac{1}{2} d \sigma_{2}(A)\end{cases}
$$

Proof. Follows from a straightforward computation.

Proposition 10.9 If $\sigma_{2}(A)>0, R>0$, then
(i) $g(L, E) \geq 0$ with equality iff $E \equiv 0$,
(ii) $|L|^{2} \leq \frac{R}{3} g(L, E)$.

Proof.
(i) is a consequence of the relation $\operatorname{Tr} E^{3} \leq \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}|E|^{3}$, which was already used in (8.17).
(ii) One calculates

$$
|L|^{2}=\left|E^{2}\right|^{2}-\frac{1}{4}|E|^{4}+\frac{1}{36} R^{2}|E|^{2}-\frac{1}{3} R \operatorname{Tr} E^{3}
$$

and $\left|E^{2}\right|^{2} \leq \frac{7}{4}|E|^{4}$, which is sharp, since $E$ might have diagonal form $\left(E_{i j}\right)=$

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cccc}
-3 \lambda & & & \\
& \lambda & & \\
& & \lambda & \\
& & & \lambda
\end{array}\right)
$$

Now we can proceed to sketch a proof of Theorem 10.4 along the lines of Obata's proof outlined above.

$$
\begin{array}{rl}
\int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} & g(L, E) u \eta^{4} d v_{g} \underset{(10.11)}{=}-2 \int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} g\left(L, \nabla_{g}^{2} u\right) \eta^{4} d v_{g} \\
& =2 \int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} g(\delta L, d u) \eta^{4} d v_{g}+2 \int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} g(L, d u) \nabla_{g}\left(\eta^{4}\right) d v_{g} \\
& \leq \quad 8 \int_{\substack{\left(\sigma_{2}=\text { const. } \\
(10.11)\right.}}|L|_{g}\left|\nabla_{g} u\right|\left|\nabla_{g} \eta\right|(\eta)^{2} d v_{g} \\
& \leq \frac{8}{(i \bar{i})} \int_{\mathbb{R}^{4}} R^{\frac{1}{2}} g^{\frac{1}{2}}(L, E)\left|\nabla_{g} u\right|\left|\nabla_{g} \eta\right|(\eta)^{2} d v_{g} \\
& \lesssim\left(\frac{1}{\varrho^{2}} \int_{A_{\varrho}} R\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2} u^{-1} d x\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}\left(\int_{A_{\varrho}} g(L, E) u \eta^{4} d v_{g}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}}
\end{array}
$$

Thus it suffices to prove that there is a constant $C$ independent of $\rho$, such that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{A_{\varrho}} R\left|\nabla_{0} u\right|^{2} u^{-1} d x \leq C \varrho^{2} \tag{10.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

since then arguments analogous to Obata's proof show that $g(L, E)=0$, which by Proposition 10.9 (i) implies $E \equiv 0$.

In order to show (10.12) one multiplies the expression (7.10) for $\sigma_{2}\left(A_{g}\right) e^{4 w}$ by $e^{-w}$, which leads to (10.12) for $n=4$. Also for $n=5$ this can be worked out, but this method seems to fail for $n \geq 6$.

## Bibliography

[1] D. Adams; A sharp inequality of J. Moser for higher order derivatives, Ann. of Math. 128 (1988), 385-398.
[2] S. Agmon, A. Douglis and L. Nirenberg; Estimates near the boundary for solutions of elliptic partial differential equations satisfying general boundary conditions. II, Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 17 (1964), 39-92.
[3] T. Aubin; Probléme isopérimétriques et espaces de Sobolev, J. Diff. Geom. 11 (1976), 573-596.
[4] T. Aubin; Equations differentielles non lineaires et probleme de Yamabe concernant la courbure scalaire, J. Math. Pures Appl. 55 (1976), 269-296
[5] T. Aubin; Meilleures constantes dans le theorem d'inclusion de Sobolev et un theorem de Fredholme non lineaire pour la transformation conforme de la courbure scalaire, J. Funct. Anal. 32 (1979), 148-174.
[6] T. Aubin; Some nonlinear problems in Riemannian Geometry, Springer Monographs in Mathematics, 1998.
[7] W. Beckner; Sharp Sobolev inequalities on the sphere and the Moser-Trudinger inequality, Ann. of Math. 138 (1993), 213-242.
[8] A. Beurling; Analytic continuation across a linear boundary, Acta Math. 128 (1972), 153-182
[9] T. Branson; Differential operators canonically associated to a conformal structure, Math. Scand. 57 (1985), 293-345.
[10] T. Branson; The functional determinant, Lecture notes series, No. 4, Seoul National University, 1993.
[11] T. Branson; Sharp Inequality, the Functional determinant and the Complementary series, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc. 347 (1995), 3671-3742.
[12] T. Branson, S.-Y. A. Chang, P. Yang; Estimates and extremals for the zetafunctional determinants on four-manifolds, Comm. Math. Phys. 149 (1992), no. 2, 241-262.
[13] T. Branson, P. Gilkey; The functional determinant of a 4-dimensional boundary value problem, Trans. AMS 344 (1994), 479-531.
[14] T.Branson, B. Orsted; Explicit functional determinants in four dimensions, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. 113 (1991), 669-682.
[15] L. A. Caffarelli; A localization property of viscosity solutions to the MongeAmpére equation and their strict convexity, Ann. of Math. (2) 131 (1990), no. 1, 129-134.
[16] L. Caffarelli, B. Gidas and J. Spruck; Asymptotic symmetry and local behavior of semi-liner equations with critical Sobolev growth, Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 42 (1989), 271-289.
[17] L. Caffarelli, L. Nirenberg and J. Spruck; The Dirichlet problem for nonlinear second order elliptic equations, I: Monge-Ampére equations, Comm. Pure and Appl. Math. 37 (1984), 369-402.
[18] L. Caffarelli, L. Nirenberg and J. Spruck; The Dirichlet problem for nonlinear second order elliptic equations, III: Functions of the eigenvalues of the Hessian, Acta Math. 155 (1985), no. 3-4, 261-301.
[19] L. Carleson, S.-Y. A. Chang; On the existence of an extremal function for an inequality of J. Moser, Bull. Sci. Math. 110 (1986), 113-127.
[20] S.-Y. A. Chang; Conformal Invariants and Partial Differential Equations, Colloquium Lecture notes, AMS, Phoenix 2004. To appear in the Bulltin of AMS.
[21] K.-C. Chang, J. Q. Liu; On Nirenberg's problem, Inter. J. of Math. 4 (1993), 35-58.
[22] S.-Y. A. Chang, M. Gursky and P. Yang; Prescribing scalar curvature on $S^{2}$ and $S^{3}$, Calc. of Var. 1 (1993), 205-229.
[23] S.-Y. A. Chang, M. Gursky and P. Yang; An equation of Monge- Ampere type in conformal geometry, and four-manifolds of positive Ricci curvature, Ann. of Math. 155 (2002), no. 3, 711-789.
[24] S.-Y. A. Chang, M. Gursky and P. Yang; An a prior estimate for a fully nonlinear equation on Four-manifolds, J. D'Analyse Math.; Thomas Wolff memorial issue, 87 (2002), 151-186.
[25] S.-Y. A. Chang, M. Gursky and P. Yang; Entire solutions of a fully nonlinear equation, Lecture on Partial Differential Equations in honor of Louis Nirenberg's 75th birthday, Chapter 3, International Press, 2003.
[26] S.-Y. A. Chang, M. Gursky and P. Yang; A conformally invariant sphere theorem in four dimensions, preprint 2002, to appear Publications de l'IHES, 2003.
[27] S.-Y. A. Chang, J. Qing; The Zeta functional determinants on manifolds with boundary I-the formula, J. Funct. Anal. 147 (1997), no.2, 327-362.
[28] S.-Y. A. Chang, J. Qing and P. Yang; Compactification for a class of conformally flat 4-manifold, Invent. Math. 142 (2000), 65-93.
[29] S.Y. A. Chang, J. Qing and P. Yang; On the topology of conformally compact Einstein 4-manifolds, to appear in Proc. of Brezis- Browder conference, math.DG/3035085.
[30] S.Y.A. Chang, J. Qing and Paul Yang; On renormalized volume on conformally copmact Einstein manifold, preprint, 2003.
[31] S.-Y. A. Chang, P. Yang; Prescribing Gaussian curvature on $S^{2}$, Acta Math. 159 (1987), 215-259.
[32] S.-Y. A. Chang, P. Yang; Conformal deformation of metrics on $S^{2}$, J. Diff. Geom. 27 (1988), no.2, 259-296.
[33] S.-Y. A. Chang, P. Yang; Extremal metrics of zeta functional determinants on 4-Manifolds, Ann. of Math. 142 (1995), 171-212.
[34] S.-Y. A. Chang, P. Yang ; Non-linear Partial Differential equations in Conformal Geometry, Proceedings for ICM 2002, Beijing, volume I, pp 189-209.
[35] J. Cheeger; Analytic torsion and the heat equation Ann. of Math. 109 (1979), no. 2, 259-322.
[36] W.X. Chen, C. Li; Classifiaction of solutions of some non-linear elliptic equations, Duke Math. J. no.3, 63 (1991), 615-622.
[37] C.-C. Chen, C.-S. Lin; Topological degree for a mean field equation on Riemann surfaces, preprint 2001.
[38] K.S. Chou, T. Wan; Asymptotic radial symmetry for solutions of $\Delta+e^{u}=0$ in a punctured disc, Pacific J. Math. 63 (1994), no. 2, 269-276.
[39] A. Derdzinski; Self-dual Kähler manifolds and Einstein manifolds of simension four, Compositio Math. 49 (1983), 405-433.
[40] S. Donaldson, P. Kronheimer; The Geometry of Four- Manifolds, Oxford University Press (1990)
[41] M. Eastwood, M. Singer; A conformally invariant Maxwell gauge, Phys. Lett. 107A (1985), 73-83.
[42] C. Evans; Classical solutions of fully non-linear, convex, second order elliptic equations, Comm. Pure Appl. Math. XXV (1982), 333-363.
[43] C. Fefferman, C. Graham; Conformal invariants, In: Élie Cartan et les Mathématiques d'aujourd'hui. Asterisque (1985), 95-116.
[44] C. Fefferman, C. R. Graham; Q-curvature and Poincare metrics, Math. Res. Lett., 9 (2002), no. 2 and 3, 139-152.
[45] M. Flucher; Extremal functions for the Trudinger-Moser inequality in 2 dimensions, Comm. Math. Helv. 67 (1992), 471-497.
[46] L. Fontana; Sharp borderline Sobolev inequalities on compact Riemannian manifolds, Comm. Math. Helv. 68 (1993), 415-454.
[47] M. Freedman; The topology of four-dimensional manifolds J. Diff. Geom. 17 (1982), 357-454.
[48] L. Garding; An inequality for hyperbolic polynomials, J. Math. Mech. 8 (1959), 957-965
[49] C. R. Graham, R. Jenne, L. Mason and G. Sparling; Conformally invariant powers of the Laplacian, I: existence, J. London Math. Soc. 46 (1992), no. 2, 557-565.
[50] C.R. Graham, M. Zworski; Scattering matrix in conformal geometry, Invent. Math. 152 (2003) no. 1, 89-118.
[51] P. Guan, J. Viaclvosky and G. Wang; Some properties of the Schouten tensor and applications to conformal geometry, preprint, 2002.
[52] P. Guan, G. Wang; A Fully nonlinear conformal flow on locally conformally flat manifolds, preprint 2002.
[53] M. Gursky; The Weyl functional, deRham cohomology and Kähler-Einstein metrics, Ann. of Math. 148 (1998), 315-337.
[54] M. Gursky; The principal eigenvalue of a conformally invariant differential operator, with an application to semi-linear elliptic PDE, Comm. Math. Phys. 207 (1999), 131-143.
[55] M. Gursky, J. Viaclovsky; A new variational characterization of threedimensional space forms, Invent. Math. 145 (2001), 251-278.
[56] M. Gursky, J. Viaclovsky; A fully nonlinear equation on four-manifolds with positive scalar curvature, J. Diff. Geom. 63 (2003), 131-154.
[57] M. Gursky, J. Viaclovsky; Volume comparison and the $\sigma_{k}$-Yamabe problem, to appear in Adv. in Math.
[58] R. Hamilton; Four manifolds with positive curvature operator, J. Diff. Geom. 24 (1986), 153-179.
[59] J. Kazdan, F. Warner; Existence and conformal deformation of metrics with prescribed Gaussian and scalar curvature, Ann. of Math. 101 (1975), 317-331.
[60] N. Krylov; Boundedly nonhomogeneous elliptic and parabolic equations, Izv. Akad. Nak. SSSR Ser. Mat. 46 (1982), 487-523; English transl. in Math. USSR Izv. 20 (1983), 459-492.
[61] Y. Li; Degree theory for second order non-linear elliptic equations, Comm. in PDE 14 (1989), 1541-1578.
[62] A. Li, Y. Li; A fully nonlinear version of the Yamabe problem and a Harnack type inequality, research announcement, C. R. Math. Acad. Sci. Paris 336 (2003), no. 4, 319-324.
[63] A. Li, Y. Li; On some conformally invariant fully nonlinear equations, Comm. Pure Appl. Math. 56 (2003), no. 10, 1416-1464.
[64] J. Moser; A Sharp form of an inequality by N. Trudinger, Indiana Univ. Math. J. 20 no. 11 (1971), 1077-1091.
[65] J. Moser; On a non-linear Problem in Differential Geometry and Dynamical Systems, Academic Press, N.Y. (ed. M. Peixoto) (1973).
[66] S. Minakschisundaram, A. Pleijel; Some properties of the eigenfunctions of the Laplace operator on Riemannian manifolds, Can. J. Math. 1 (1949), 242-256.
[67] H. Mckean, I. Singer; Curvature and eigenvalues of the Laplacien, J. Diff. Geom. 1 (1967), 43-70.
[68] W. Müller; Analytic torsion and $R$-torsion of Riemannian manifolds Adv. in Math. 28 (1978), no. 3, 233-305.
[69] K. Okikiolu; The Campbell-Hausdorff theorem for elliptic operators and a related trace formula, Duke Math. J., 79 (1995) 687-722.
[70] K. Okikiolu; Critical metrics for the determinant of the Laplacian in odd dimensions, Ann. of Math. 153 (2001), no. 2, 471-531.
[71] M. Obata; Certain conditions for a Riemannian manifold to be isometric with a sphere, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 14 (1962), 333-342.
[72] E. Onofri; On the positivity of the effective action in a theory of random surfaces', Comm. Math. Phys. 86 (1982), 321-326.
[73] B. Osgood, R. Phillips and P. Sarnak; Extremals of determinants of Laplacians, J. Funct. Anal. 80 (1988), 148-211.
[74] B. Osgood, R. Phillips and P. Sarnak; Compact isospectral sets of surfaces, J. Funct. Anal. 80 (1988), 212-234.
[75] S. Paneitz; A quartic conformally covariant differential operator for arbitrary pseudo-Riemannian manifolds, Preprint, (1983).
[76] A.V. Pogorelev; The Dirichlet problem for the multidimensional analogue of the Monge-Ampere equation, Dokl. Acad. Nank. SSSR, 201(1971), 790-793. In English translation, Soviet Math. Dokl. 12 (1971), 1227-1231.
[77] A. Pogorelov; The Minkowski multidimensional problem, Winston, Washington, (1978).
[78] Polya, Szego; Problems and theorems in analysis. I, Springer-Verlag (1978).
[79] D. Ray, I. Singer; R-torsion and the Laplacian on Riemannian manifolds, Adv. in Math. 7 (1971), 145-210.
[80] K. Richardson; Critical points of the determinant of the Laplace operator, J. Functional Anal. 122 (1994), no.1, 52-83.
[81] S. Rosenberg; The Laplacian on a Riemannian manifold, an introduction to analysis on manifolds, London Mathematical Society Student Texts, Vol. 31 (1997), Cambridge University Press.
[82] R. Schoen; Conformal deformation of a Riemannian metric to constant scalar curvature, J. Diff. Geom. 20 (1984), 479-495.
[83] J. Sha, D. Yang; Positive Ricci curvature on compact simply connected 4manifolds, Differential geometry, Riemannian geometry (Los Angeles, CA, 1990), Proc. Sympos. Pure Math. 54, Part 3, Amer. Math. Soc., Providence, RI (1993),529-538.
[84] T. L. Soong; Extremal functions for the Moser inequality on $S^{2}$ and $S^{4}$, Ph.D Thesis (1991).
[85] E. Stein, G. Weiss; Introduction to Fourier analysis on Euclidean spaces Princeton Mathematical Series 32, Princeton University Press (1971).
[86] R. Schoen, S. T. Yau; Lectures on Differential Geometry, Vol. 1, International Press (1994).
[87] N. Trudinger; On embedding into Orlicz spaces and some applications, J. Math. Mech. 17 (1967), 473-483.
[88] N. Trudinger; Remarks concerning the conformal deformation of Riemannian structure on compact manifolds, Ann. Scuolo Norm. Sip. Pisa, 22 (1968), 265274.
[89] K. Uhlenbeck, J. Viaclovsky; Regularity of weak solutions to critical exponent variational equations, Math. Res. Lett. 7 (2000), 651-656.
[90] J. Viaclovsky; Conformal geometry, Contact geometry and the Calculus of Variations, Duke Math. J. 101 (2000), no.2, 283-316.
[91] H. Weyl; The theory of groups and quantum mechanics, Dover, NY, (1950).
[92] H. Yamabe; On a deformation of Riemannian structures on compact manifolds, Osaka Math. J. 12 (1960), 21-37.
[93] D. Yang; $L^{p}$ pinching and compactness theorems for compact Riemannian manifolds, Forum Math. 4 (1992), no. 3, 323-333.
[94] R. Ye; Global existence and convergence of the Yamabe flow, J. Diff. Geom. 39 (1994), no. 1, 35-50.


[^0]:    ${ }^{1} \int_{\Omega} e^{\beta u^{2}} d x \leq \int_{B_{1}(0)} e^{\beta\left(u^{*}\right)^{2}} d x$ and $\int_{B_{1}(0)}\left|\nabla u^{*}\right|^{2} d x \leq \int_{\Omega}|\nabla u|^{2} d x$, if $u^{*}$ is the symmetric rearrangement of $u$, see [78].

[^1]:    ${ }^{2}$ We have seen before that $W^{1,2}$-solutions of (2.6) are in fact of class $C^{\infty}\left(S^{2}\right)$, compare with the proof of Theorem 1.3.

[^2]:    ${ }^{3}$ [32]

[^3]:    ${ }^{4}$ Definition: $A(t) \sim B(t)$ iff $\lim _{t \rightarrow 0} \frac{A(t)-B(t)}{t^{m}}=0$ for all $m \geq 0$.

[^4]:    ${ }^{5}(*)$ After this note was written, a form of Harnack inequality was established for a class of fully non-linear elliptic equations defined on $R^{n}$ which includes the $\sigma_{k}$ equations. The reader is referred to the recent articles of [52] and [62].

